

- The Story of a Man called Dalton -

“A semi-fictional tale about my Dalton family, with history and some true facts told; or what may have been”

This story starts out as a fictional piece that tries to tell about the beginnings of my Dalton family. We can never know how far back in time this Dalton line started, but I have started this when the Celtic tribes inhabited Britain many yeas ago. Later on in the narrative, you will read factual information I and other Dalton researchers have found and published with much embellishment. There also is a lot of old English history that I have copied that are in the public domain. From this fictional tale we continue down to a man by the name of le Sieur de Dalton, who is my first documented ancestor, then there is a short history about each successive descendant of my Dalton direct line, with others, down to myself, Garth Rodney Dalton; (my birth name) Most of this later material was copied from my research of my Dalton roots.

If you like to read about early British history; Celtic, Romans, Anglo-Saxons, Normans, Knight's, Kings, English, American and family history, then this is the book for you!

Some of you will say i am full of it but remember this, “What may have been!”

Give it up you knaves!



Researched, complied, formated, indexed, wrote, edited, copied, copy-written, misspelled and filed by Rodney G. Dalton in the comfort of his easy chair at 1111 N – 2000 W Farr West, Utah in the United States of America in the Twenty First-Century A.D.

A tall tail: (highly exaggerated – from Websters Dictionary)

The Stories of Albion and Brutus:

Once upon a time there was a giant called Neptune. When he was quite a tiny boy, Neptune loved the sea. All day long he played in it, swimming, diving, and laughing gleefully as the waves dashed over him.

As he grew older he came to know and love the sea so well that the sea and the waves loved him too, and acknowledged him to be their king. At last people said he was not only king of the waves, but god of the sea.

Neptune had a very beautiful wife who was called Amphitrite. He had also many sons. As each son became old enough to reign, Neptune made him king over an island.

Neptune's fourth son was called Albion. When it came to his turn to receive a kingdom, a great council was called to decide upon an island for him.

Now Neptune and Amphitrite loved Albion more than any of their other children. This made it very difficult to choose which island should be his.

The mermaids and mermen, as the wonderful people who live in the sea are called, came from all parts of the world with news of beautiful islands. But after hearing about them, Neptune and Amphitrite would shake their heads and say, 'No, that is not good enough for Albion.'

At last a little mermaid swam into the pink and white coral cave in which the council was held. She was more beautiful than any mermaid who had yet come to the council. Her eyes were merry and honest, and they were blue as the sky and the sea. Her hair was as yellow as fine gold, and in her cheeks a lovely pink came and went. When she spoke, her voice sounded as clear as a bell and as soft as the whisper of the waves, as they ripple upon the shore.

'O Father Neptune,' she said, 'let Albion come to my island. It is a beautiful little island. It lies like a gem in the bluest of waters. There the trees and the grass are green, the cliffs are white and the sands are golden. There the sun shines and the birds sing. It is a land of beauty. Mountains and valleys, broad lakes and swift-flowing rivers, all are there. Let Albion come to my island.'

'Where is this island?' said Neptune and Amphitrite both at once. They thought it must indeed be a beautiful land if it were only half as lovely as the little mermaid said.

'Oh, come, and I will show it to you,' replied she. Then she swam away in a great hurry to show her beautiful island, and Neptune, Amphitrite, and all the mermaids and mermen followed.

It was a wonderful sight to see them as they swam along. Their white arms gleamed in the sunshine, and their golden hair floated out over the water like fine seaweed. Never before had so many of the sea-folk been gathered together at one place, and the noise of their tails flapping through the water brought all the little fishes and great sea monsters out, eager to know what was happening. They swam and swam until they came to the little green island with the white cliffs and yellow sands.

As soon as it came in sight, Neptune raised himself on a big wave, and when he saw the little island lying before him, like a beautiful gem in the blue water, just as the mermaid had said, he cried out in joy, 'This is the island of my love. Albion shall rule it and Albion it shall be called.'

So Albion took possession of the little island, which until then had been called Samothea, and he changed its name to Albion, as Neptune had said should be done.

For seven years Albion reigned over his little island. At the end of that time he was killed in a fight with the hero Hercules. This was a great grief to Neptune and Amphitrite. But because of the love they bore to their son Albion, they continued to love and watch over the little green island which was called by his name.

For many years after the death of Albion the little island had no ruler. At last, one day there came sailing from the far-off city of Troy a prince called Brutus. He, seeing the fair island, with white cliffs and golden sands, landed with all his mighty men of war. There were many giants in the land in those days, but Brutus fought and conquered them. He made himself king, not only over Albion, but over all the islands which lay around. He called them the kingdom of Britain or Britannia after his own name, Brutus, and Albion he called Great Britain because it was the largest of the islands.

Although after this the little island was no longer called Albion, Neptune still loved it. When he grew old and had no more strength to rule, he gave his scepter to the islands called **Britannia**.

Source of above: "Heritage History" by H. E. Marshall.

The above tale is a good way to start the history of our Dalton family in Britain. There has been a ongoing debate among Dalton family researchers about our origins. By our official DNA we are shown to be R1b1, or the Atlantic Modal, or part of the Celtic race. This can't be denied, but it also don't prove just where our first Dalton was born. This

can naturally not be proven because of the very large time that has passed. So we just speculate and write some history of the events of the times.

At a time a very long, long ago, in the north of the isle of Britannia, or today's Britain there was born to a warrior family, a baby boy. They named this boy, ***Daltone***, after his father, the chief leader of this hill fort family. All the male children of this warrior family were named after the father, and when others addressed them, it was as “the man from Daltonia” who lived on a hill beside a place in the dale; or Daltone, abbreviated finely to de Dalton and then to the name used today as Dalton.

The elder Daltone's have been telling stories about their ancient ancestors who were great warriors who they thought were from lands far away to the east. These Celtic people of Daltonia belonged to the tribe called Brigantes, and the sub-tribe named the Setanti in Lancashire, England or back then, Britannia.

Some history of the Celts:

The Iron Age Celts lived in Britain before and after Jesus. We're going back a very, very long time – over two thousand years ago, in fact. Our years are numbered by starting at the year Jesus Christ was born - and the Iron Age Celts lived here 750 years before that. The Iron Age Celts were a tribe of people who lived all over Europe. It was a brave and inquiring Greek navigator, named Pytheas who traveled around Europe writing about what he has seen who gave us the name of Britain. When he sailed from the Mediterranean in 343 BC to investigate the isle that others told to have a people who was greenish-blue in color, he had to see for himself. He found these people (The Celts) stripped down to their coarse woven undershorts and painted themselves with a green-blue dye that they extracted from the leaves of the woad plant. These inhabitants called the island Albion, and called



Celtic Warrior

themselves Pretani. Now Pretani is the Celtic word for painted and Pytheas seems to have transcribed this into Greek as *pretannike*, meaning 'the land of the painted people' When later translated into Latin, *pretannike* yielded first Pretannia and then Britannia. But before that Britain was known as the 'Tin island'

During the centuries before the Roman conquest, Iron Age Europe was home to the many peoples that we now collectively call the early "Celts." Known to the Greeks and Romans as fearless warriors, prodigious drinkers, and amoral barbarians, the Celts interacted with the classical Mediterranean through trade and in hostile encounters. Feared for their attacks on Rome, the Celts were a constant presence in Europe, northern Italy and Spain on the one hand, and in western Turkey on the other. In the first century BC and thereafter saw numerous major military incursions by the Romans into Celtic territory. The Iron Age ended in AD 43 when the Romans invaded Britain.

This *Daltone* family lived in their own hill fort which is a defensive structure enclosing high places with rings of ditches and banks. Often there were wooden or stone walls atop the banks as a further barrier. In some cases a series of concentric ditches and banks were built. The hill forts do not seem to have been places of permanent settlement, but may have been emergency assembly points for tribes, or the case of the smaller forts, even single families.

Most Celts lived in roundhouses, with thatched roofs of straw or heather. In places where there were plenty of trees the walls were made from wattle and daub but in the north of Britain the walls were made of large stones held together with clay. The Celts would light a fire in the middle of the roundhouse for cooking and heating. It must have been very smoky inside. The Celts were war-like and fearsome people. They were large and intimidating. They were rowdy, and spent the majority of their time hunting and playing games. They loved to eat and drink wine and beer.

The Celts also placed high value on appearances. The men were muscular and tall. They had beards and long drooping mustaches. They wore breeches (long trousers). Warriors were very careful to put on a clean shirt every time they went into battle. It seemed to be the ritual that spear men went into battle naked except for their neck torques (thick metal ornaments worn around the neck). Before going into battle all men washed their hair in lime and slicked it back. The lime was a dye, which would account for the reddish-brown color of the Celts hair.

They used pots and bowls of wood and leather, though they certainly had the technological know-how to produce pottery.



Celtic Roundhouse

The Celts also placed high value on appearances. The men were muscular and tall. They had beards and long drooping mustaches. They wore breeches (long trousers). Warriors were very careful to put on a clean shirt every time they went into battle. It seemed to be the ritual that spear men went into battle naked except for their neck torques (thick metal ornaments worn around the neck). Before going into battle all men washed their hair in lime and slicked it back. The lime was a dye, which would account for the reddish-brown color of the Celts hair.

They used pots and bowls of wood and leather, though they certainly had the technological know-how to produce pottery.

The Celts were a warlike race who did not flinch from any battle, nor scorn any excuse to take up arms against any opponent, no matter how small the issue. These people were a thorn in the Roman hand, often causing trouble.

Celts believed that the soul was immortal. After a person died, he/she was believed to go to "heaven". The Celtic version of heaven was a better earth, with no sickness, calamity, or old age. All people (especially women) were beautiful. The sun was always shining, and the birds were always singing. No one was ever hungry or thirsty because food and drink appeared magically.

Back to our story; Now this *Daltone* boy was expected to grow up to be a great fighting warrior like his past ancestors and by his strength and courage would always be the

leader of this small tribe that lived in the lower area of the future county Lancashire near the river we call Douglas near Wigon. They lived in peace for a few years at a time, but always had to be on the lookout for those devils that come looking to enslave this small group, killing the men and taking the women for their own. When this did happen, the leader fought for the life's of his people, but sometimes he was slain, but luckily he had many sons that lived to carry on. They had a large forest in back of their hill fort where there was a large out crop of rocks. In a hidden place, only known by this **Daltonia** family, they could hide until the invaders left the area. So year after year this family from **Daltonia** survived to fight another day.

The invading barbarians were from many county's across the sea between Britannia and Europe. They were known by the name of the area they come from, first the Roman's with armor and chariots, building roads and houses. The Romans completely disrupted the existing Celtic tribes, their territories and way of life. Many left for Gaul, Brittany, Ireland or were confined to the 'Celtic fringes' of Britain. But after many years the Celtic tribes of the north and the Roman's sought to make peace with each other and for almost 400 years the two races lived in peace.

The Romans in Britain:

The terms "England", "Scotland", and "Wales" are used purely to indicate geographic location relative to modern country boundaries - at the time of the Roman occupation, these individual countries did not exist.

The Roman occupation unquestionably had an effect on Britain, but it is easy to overstate how widespread the effect was. Although the form of life changed for some people, the essence of Britain Celtic society was altered very little.

One of the first things the Romans did was to involve the conquered tribes in the administration of the province. They set up administrative centres according to traditional tribal territories, and involved the tribal aristocracies in the decision making process. This was standard Roman practice, and a wise one. They made the conquered people responsible for their own administration within a Roman framework. It was part of their plan to bring the benefits of civilization, Roman style, to other peoples. It worked, for the way to prestige and social advancement was through the Roman bureaucracy.

What did the Romans do in Britain? Well, for a start, they encouraged the growth of towns. The Romans saw urban life as the epitome of sophisticated civilization. They encouraged the growth of towns near their army bases, and established special towns as settlements for retired soldiers. They encouraged the ruling class of Celtic aristocrats to build town dwellings, and they made the towns centres of vibrant commercial activity.

As elsewhere in the Empire, the local "councils" in the towns were encouraged to build civic buildings as a mark of civilization. There was no standard plan to adhere to, so there was a great deal of local variety in the way that the towns interpreted the Roman ideal.

The Romans built towns in lowland areas, such as at fords across rivers, in contrast to the earlier Neolithic and Iron Age practice of sticking to the slopes and higher ground above the valleys. Town boundaries, unlike military forts, were not laid out in rigid rectangles or squares, but they did contain a regular grid-like network of streets. Most towns were walled, though at first the walls would have been no more than earthen banks with ditches. By the 3rd and certainly the 4th century the earthen banks were replaced by stone and masonry. The centre of a Roman town was a forum, or civic centre. Usually an open square or rectangle with colonnades, the forum gave access to the basilica, or town hall. It was here that courts of justice were held, though it could also be used as a merchants assembly.

Town life was a real social revolution for the largely rural Celtic society. Those who aspired to the wealth and prosperity that came with the Roman occupation threw themselves into life in the towns.

Every town had public baths. The baths were a Roman institution, and most town dwellers would have attended daily before their evening meal. They were open to both sexes, though at different times of day, and served as a combination health club, healing spa, and meeting place. The order that people went through the baths seems to have been up to the individual, though they were generally arranged in the order of exercise area, disrobing area, cold, warm, and hot rooms. Some baths further divided up the hot rooms into steam and dry heat areas.

Many towns also offered the entertainments of the theatre and amphitheatre. The theatre, an open air tiered clam-shell, would have offered fare from classical plays, pantomime, and religious festivals.

The amphitheater, an open air oval, would have appealed to a less discriminating taste, offering gladiatorial combats, contests between men and animals, and public executions. The number of theaters and amphitheaters in Britain is small, so these particular entertainments may not have been so popular.

Joining the towns together were the Roman roads. Over the course of the occupation the Romans built over 9600 kilometers of roads in Britain. Although, contrary to reputation, they weren't always straight, they were amazingly well built, and made troop movement and later the movement of commercial goods much easier. The imperial posting service, used by Roman officials, maintained inns and relays of horses at intervals of 30 to 50

kilometers along the roads.

The roads were literally highways, raised up on a cambered bank of material dug from roadside ditches. They were constructed in several layers, the final layer generally being gravel or flint, and reached from 4 to 8 meters wide. [Click here](#) for a more thorough look at Roman roads.

Aside from the towns, the other sign of Romanticized civilization was the growth of villas. In Latin the word villa means simply, "farm", so technically villas were any form of rural agricultural dwelling built in a Roman style. In practice, though, when we speak of villas we mean the country estates of the Romanised British elite. Although at first the conquered tribal aristocracy may have been drawn into towns, it wasn't long before they began a "back to the land" movement.

Most large villas are built quite close to major urban centers, generally within ten miles, so the owners were never very far from the center of affairs. Villas were more than fancy houses, though; they were centers of rural industry and agriculture. In one complex they could hold the landowner and his family, overseers, laborers, storehouses, and industrial buildings. Although some may have been strictly the center of large farms, others included industry in the form of pottery and metalworking.

Individual houses were as different then as they are now, but the villas followed some general patterns. They were half-timber frame houses on stone foundations, one story in height, capped with slate or clay tiled roofs. Underfloor heating systems were universal, though in one intriguing case the system was never fired up. Tile floors were common, and most larger villas contained at least one room with a mosaic floor. Walls may have been decorated with mosaics or painted scenes. Furniture was made of wood, in patterns similar to Roman style throughout the Empire. Many villas also had separate bath houses.

The golden age of the villa in Britain was in the 2nd and 3rd centuries. After that they fell into disuse or were taken over for other purposes.

Industry in various forms was encouraged by the Romans. In their bid for the veneer of civilization the elite of Britain imported Roman wine, jewelery, and pottery. In return they exported cattle, grain, lead, iron, tin, and, curiously enough, hunting dogs. The local pottery industries throughout Britain flourished, as did iron working. The large standing Roman army in Britain, as many as 40,000 troops for long periods of time, was a natural market energizer for British industry, and the extensive Roman road network helped speed the transport of goods throughout the island.

Despite the growth of towns and bureaucracy and all the other essentials of civilization that came with the Roman conquest, the lot of the majority was unchanged. Britain was an agricultural province, dependent on small farms. The lives of the farmers changed very little. They still built round Celtic huts and worked the same fields in the same way. Their standard of living changed little, if at all. Despite the veneer of Roman civilization, Britain was still largely a Celtic, or even a Neolithic society.



Roman Soldier

Then come a new group of barbarians from the Germanic region of Europe. Again the Dalton family was in fear for their lives, but again they survived this army of foreign devils. For many years these Anglo-Saxon invaders ruled the small isle of Britannia, until another Army of barbarians landed on the northern coast. The word Saxon is used as a generic term for people from Germany. In fact, the Saxons are made up of three peoples from different parts of Germany. Saxons are people from north west Germany or Old Saxony as it is sometimes known. Angles are people from the Germany/Denmark border.

The Anglo-Saxon period began around 449 A.D.; A Brief History of Anglo-Saxon England.

The Anglo-Saxon settlement of England was no overnight affair. The late-Roman army had many Germanic elements and from the fourth century they and their families had settled in Britain. It is, therefore, not surprising that after the withdrawal of the legions at the beginning of the fifth century individual towns looked to Germanic mercenaries to maintain their security. Vortigern, the post-Roman Kentish king, is often left to take the blame, but he was no doubt only one of several leaders who took this course. The fifth and sixth centuries saw increased Germanic settlement although the balance of local power fluctuated between Britons and Saxons. Ultimately, even in areas such as Northumbria, where Germanic settlement was sparse, the English language became the predominant one and the Celtic language and lifestyles became marginalized to Wales, Cornwall and northern Scotland.

The end of the sixth century saw another major new influence on the Germanic invaders - Christianity. Although the Romano-British Church survived and the Anglo-Saxons would have had contact with indigenous Christians, the Church initially existed only on the fringes of English settlement, as paganism remained strong. In 597 a Christian mission sent by Pope Gregory the Great and led by Augustine landed in Kent. Its initial success was dramatic. The prompt conversion of King Aethelberht of Kent and the kings of Essex and East Anglia, then the baptism of Aethelberht's son-in-law King Edwin of Northumbria (617 - 33) by his bride's Roman chaplain Paulinus established Christianity within the highest echelons of English society. Sees were established at Canterbury, Rochester, London and York.

The four kingdoms soon relapsed into paganism, and initially only Kent was reconverted. The evangelistic initiative passed to the Scottish church based on Iona, founded by the Irishman, Columba, in 563. King Oswald of Northumbria (634 - 42) was converted while in exile among the Scots and invited Iona to send him a mission: the result was Aidan's foundation of Lindisfarne in 635. The Irish bishops of Lindisfarne consolidated Christianity in Northumbria; their fellow countrymen Duima and Ceollach, and their English pupils, Cedd and Trumhere, re-established the religion in Essex and introduced it to Mercia and the Middle Angles, whose king, Penda (?610-55), was the last great pagan ruler. In none of these kingdoms was there any significant relapse but Iona was out of line with Rome on the methods of calculating the date of Easter. In 663 Bishop Colman was defeated on the issue at the Synod of Whitby and withdrew to Iona, leaving the way clear for the organisation of the English Church by Theodore of Canterbury (669 - 90). Although the Church of Iona found favour with some of the later kings it was generally the Roman church that was dominant.



Anglo-Saxon Warrior

Of the seven Saxon Kingdoms (the Heptarchy), the first one to achieve supremacy was Northumbria, whose high culture during the seventh century is reflected in such works as the Lindisfarne Gospels. They ruled the whole area between Derby and Edinburgh and their central territories of Yorkshire and Northumberland remained independent until the Vikings took York in 866, whilst the lordship of Bamburgh continued as an Anglian enclave throughout the tenth century.

The eighth century saw the rise of Mercia who pushed back the Northumbrians and West Saxons and took control of East Anglia and Kent. The peak of Mercian domination came under Offa (died 796), though it remained a potent force until the abdication of Burgred in 874.

And still our Daltone family survived this latest invasion of a foreign race. Generations after generation fought these new invaders, some dying, but the main line still intact. Peace and quite time lay ahead for a few generations until around the year of 783 when the next group of foreign raiders come about. They were called Vikings and were a ferocious lot. These Vikings in 793, first landed on the island of Lindisfarne, off the northeast coast of England. The monks were unpleasantly surprised by the arrival of violent raiders from the sea. Their misfortune is the first clearly dated event in the saga of the Vikings - the last and most dramatic exodus in the long story of migration from Scandinavia, the original home of the Goths and Vandals.

The word Viking is Scandinavian for 'pirate', and it accurately describes the Norsemen who for two centuries raided the coasts of Britain.



Viking Warrior

From the time of the first known raids in Lindisfarne in 793 until the Battle of Stanford Bridge in 1066 the Vikings were the most powerful and influential people in Britain and also in northern Europe. With an extensive trade from western Europe to the Black Sea they had made themselves known. They settled in many places of Europe. The Vikings were also very proud of their appearance. They wore beautiful clothes and jewelry and took great care in making their clothes and war gear. The Barbarians, on the other hand, were not as interested in beauty, they were interested in keeping warm because of the cold weather.

Again year after year, generation after generation this Daltonia family still survived. How? By skill, toughness and intelligent. For years the family lived with the Vikings, because after all there were times of peace between the two peoples. Then on day a group of men with fancy cloths and robes come to visit. They seemed friendly and told these hill fort people that there were there to take a survey of the land. At the time this was ok, with the now peace living people of the men from Daltonia, but later when the new Kings tax collectors ask for payment they were very upset.

These new and powerful men were called Normans, and next i will tell the readers, the History of the Norman Conquest of England, starting on Sept. 28, 1066.

William, the Duke of Normandy, invaded England in the autumn of 1066, beginning a campaign of conquest leading to his crowning as the King of England and the establishment of Norman rule over England. William still had to consolidate his power, and over the next several years, he and his Norman followers defeated several Anglo-Saxon rebellions. The Norman Conquest is significant for several reasons. William was the new King of England, but he was also still the Duke of Normandy in France, which put him and his successors in the awkward position of ruling one country, while still



William, Duke of Normandy and then King William I, the 'Conqueror'

serving as a vassal (underling) of another country's ruler, in this case, the King of France.

One of King William's most significant acts was to commission the Domesday Survey, in 1085, which cataloged the population of England and the King also wished to know the existing and potential value of his new kingdom. Surveyors were sent out across the whole country and their report was the massive Domesday Book which noted land down to individual landholdings. This Domesday Book lists the names of the small village of the Dalton family as; "In the manor of Crakehill, Dalton, Asenby, Skyeton, Bernulf had 26 carucates of land to be taxed, where they may be 15 ploughs." Also the name of

Daltone. (Why do you think our men are named Daltone!)

The Anglo-Saxon population was now ruled primarily by William's Norman comrades. But still this family from the little village of Dalton in future Lancashire survived.

Let me now continue with the story of this latest **Daltone** survivor and the first mention of the first of our line that has been researched. He was known by the French name of **le Sieur de Dalton**.

1- Le Sieur de Dalton; The first of our Dalton line, and where we will start with our Dalton pedigree. Of note each Dalton name on the descendant list is designated by a number, in blue ink.

Le Sieur is a French name meaning mister. Some of our present day Dalton researchers say the this **le Sieur de Dalton** was of Norman extraction, but the truth is he probably originated on British soil, and so the story above. This **Daltone** man from the little village of Daltone in Lancashire joined the the King's forces (army) on behalf of the last Norman King of England, King Stephen, and went to France to meet with the future King, Henry II, (the first Plantagenet King of England and now regarded as the greatest of all the medieval Kings) prior to his return to England in 1154. Our **Dalton**, as we will now call him, man rose up quickly in the Henry's Court, becoming his good friend and a man that could be trusted with any task. He was also with King Henry II during his invasion of Ireland in 1171. There is a tale that after completing official business in France, this **le Sieur de Dalton**, now named Walter had a brief affair with and possibly even secretly marrying the daughter of King Louis VII of France, but this has not been reliably confirmed. Later, as a reward to services to King Henry II, Walter was knighted by the king, and given a large amount of land and riches back in his village of Dalton. He returned a very rich and powerful man with a title and he raised his new family which now consisted of his wife, Jane and two boys, John and Simon. This **le Sieur de Dalton** now in the service of King Henry II was to be called many time to join with his King in his travels around the King's landholdings and he fought where needed.

Some Irish Dalton researchers tell us that this Dalton man was named **Sir Walter D'Alton** and he first went to Ireland in 1169 with the Earl of Pembroke, Richard le Clare or by his nickname "Strongbow". This Richard le Clare, a Norman, was owner of a very large bit of property on the English and Wales border, with others and these Lords and Earl's were called "The Lords of Marchers"

As the above story tells us, **Sir Walter D'Alton** come back to England and then was with King Henry II as one of his Knight's under Hugh de Lacy when the King invaded Ireland. By this time i believe this Sir Walter had a third son named Phillip, who continued the Irish Dalton line.



King Henry II of England

John O'Hart gives a detail account of the Anglo-Norman invasions of Ireland, starting from 1169 and naming several Knights. In 1171, Henry II went to Ireland attended by Richard "Strongbow" de Clare, Hugh de Lacy, Humphrey de Boham and other Lords and Barons, including D'Alton and D'Isney. The de Lacys had come over to England from Normandy with William the Conqueror and was Lords of Lincoln. According to Dan Dowling, so had the D'Alitons and according to a member of the Disney family, the Disneys also. Under a early "grant of dignity" as a Baron from Hugh de Lacy, Dalton and his descendants adopted and still retain the fleur de lis on their armorials, as in the right of the daughter of King Louis. Edward Lysagh, formerly chief Herald of Ireland, describes the coat of arms as "azure, a lion rampard, guardant, argant, charged on the shoulder with a crescent sable, between five fleur de lis. This moon indicates the second son of a family.

The English Invasion:

King Henry II invaded Ireland in October 1171. His huge army of 500 knights and 4000 horsemen, foot soldiers and archers arrived in Waterford.

He received approval from the newly elected English Pope, Nicholas Breakspeare, Adrian the Fourth, on the grounds that morals in Ireland had become corrupt, and religion almost extinct, and his purpose was to bring the barbarous nation within the fold of the faith and under church discipline. But if we supposed Ireland to be irreligious then, strange indeed would be the choice of an apostle in Henry, a man of vicious life, a

supporter of anti-Popes, and reasonably suspected of, and all but excommunicated for, instigating the murder of the holy Thomas a Becket. Those who contend that the Bull was an English fabrication for impressing the irreligious Irish and making easy their conquest point to the fact that the most ancient copies of the document discovered lack both date and signature.

Two years earlier In May of 1169, with a small but efficient body of thirty knights in full armour, sixty horsemen in half armour and three hundred archers, Fitz Stephen landed at Bannow, Wexford - and another Knight Maurice de Prendergast with a company of about three hundred. On receiving the news of the landing, MacMurrough raised a body of five hundred from among his Leinster subjects and joined them. And, together they marched against the Danish city of Wexford, which, after repulsing two assaults, capitulated to the strange army with its armoured horses and horsemen and its wonderfully skilled and disciplined army. MacMurrough bestowed the city upon Fitz Stephen and settled near by lands upon de Prendergast and de Mont Maurice.

The Ard Righ and princes of the other provinces looked on inactive. Every prince, occupied as usual with his own problems was not much concerned about what did not immediately affect his own territory.

Strongbow followed in a few months with two hundred knights and a thousand men and immediately took over the city of Waterford. Then they marched into Meath and Breffni laying waste as they went. Henry hearing of Strongbows successes in Ireland grew jealous and summoned Strongbow and all his subjects to return to England. Eventually Strongbow went and laid his successes before Henry. As a result Henry himself went with five hundred knights and four thousand horse and foot soldiers, and landed at Waterford. Slowly the Irish chiefs submitted. When Henry left, the Irish began to wake up to what they had done and slowly began to rise up against the enemy. Now more familiar with the Norman discipline and equipment the Irish princes set strategy against skill and discovered that the Normans were not omnipotent. O'Brien of Thomond inflicted a big defeat upon them at Thurles. Every Norman chief warred on his own account, for purpose of extending his power and possessions and of course every Irish chief and prince, when opportunity offered, warred against the invader. But such demoralization set in, that in short time not only was Irish chief warring upon Norman baron, but Irish chief was warring with Irish chief, Norman baron warring with Norman baron, and a Norman-Irish alliance would be warring against Normans, or against Irish. Or against another combination of both. The Normans not only marked their progress by much slaughtering and many barbarities, but signalized themselves by robbing and burning churches and monasteries, and oftentimes slaughtering the inmates. They harried, robbed, ravished and destroyed where so ever they went. And against one another, in their own feuds, they oftentimes exercised as much barbarity as against the Irish. Fearfully true is the Four Masters' word that MacMurrough's treacherous act

"made of Ireland a trembling sod".

Let us now go back a few years to Lancashire and continue the story of the first son of **le Sieur de Dalton** who now lived in what is then called Dalton, South Lancashire. This **2- John de Dalton**; who died after 1190 had a son named John like his father. This second **3- John de Dalton**; named his first son, Richard. This Richard starts the long line of Dalton's who were made Knight's.

Now these two de Dalton men, John 1 & John 2, father & son were normal land holders, gentleman you might say, who had inherited all the Lancashire estates from **le Sieur de Dalton**, who had died in Ireland. They also survived the somewhat peaceful times in the little village of Dalton in which they owned. They had many workers and tennets and controlled all this from their very large Manor house.

What was life like in this Dalton manor house? It was tolerably comfortable. Though the comforts of a modern house did not exist, they would have had privacy from the estate workers. For the estate workers, a winter's night would have been almost certainly very cold and uncomfortable. At Dalton the Great Hall contained one large fire but the hall itself would have been very draughty. All those who slept here would have slept on straw. Washing facilities would have been very poor and there would have been a very limited amount of time to wash as workers worked from sunrise to sunset. There were no obvious toilets at the Dalton manor house - as would have been true in Medieval England as a whole, except in the monasteries. For the peasants who worked on the land, life was still difficult and the feudal system gave them no freedom. Even the lords of a manor were bound by the duties required by the feudal system - and manors could be taken from noble families who were deemed to have angered the king.

The term "manor house" can be loosely applied to a whole range of buildings, but at its most basic refers to the house of a local lord/landowner. In strict architectural terms a manor house is a late medieval country house. The medieval manor house has its architectural roots in the Saxon hall, a simple rectangular building which acted as a communal gathering place for eating, sleeping, and transacting business. Servants and other retainers slept around an open fire in the centre of the hall, while the lord and his family occupied a raised dais at one end of the hall. This simple Saxon design was incorporated into early Norman castles, with the hall occupying the first floor of the castle keep.

By the 13th century the fortified manor house emerged. Not quite castle, yet more advanced than the Saxon hall, these early fortified manors were built in brick or stone, with a timber roof. The fire was still open and the hall was still the abode of servants and retainers, but now a new room was added; the solar. The solar was a private room for the lord and his family, usually on the first floor, and reached from the raised dais at one end

of the hall. The space beneath the solar was often given over to storage.

At the other end of the hall from the solar was the kitchen area, usually separated from the main hall by wooden screens. Over time the kitchen became a totally separate room, often arranged at right angles to the main hall. The main entrance to the manor was at the kitchen end. Window space was at a minimum in the fortified manor, and outer defenses may have included a moat with a gatehouse reached by a drawbridge.

The little village of Dalton consisted of a population comprised of mostly of farmers. Houses, barns sheds, and animal pens clustered around the center of the village, which was surrounded by plowed fields and pastures. Medieval society depended on the village for protection and a majority of people during these centuries called a village home. Most were born, toiled, married, had children and later died within the village, rarely venturing beyond its boundaries.

Common enterprise was the key to a village's survival. Some villages were temporary, and the society would move on if the land proved infertile or weather made life too difficult. Other villages continued to exist for centuries. Every village had a lord, even if he didn't make it his permanent residence, and after the 1100's castles often dominated the village landscape. Neighboring villages would parley to set boundaries that would be set out in village charters.

Medieval peasants were either classified as free men or as "villeins," those who owed heavy labor service to a lord, were bound to the land, and subject to feudal dues. Village life was busy for both classes, and for women as well as men. Much of this harsh life was lived outdoors, wearing simple dress and subsisting on a meager diet.

Village life would change from outside influences with market pressures and new landlords. As the centuries passed, more and more found themselves drawn to larger cities. Yet modern Europe owes much to these early medieval villages.



The present day village of Dalton in Lancashire. A few miles south of Bispham

The Dalton's lived in the newly made Lancashire or county. It was named after the town of Lancaster.

The name of Lancashire is said to be derived from the Saxon Lancasterscyre, after the county town. Antiquarians say that the name of the county town itself came from Alauna, Lancaster being situated upon the River Lan.

Lancashire, at the time of the taking of the Domesday Book in 1086, held a very different profile. It extended from the northern shore of the River Mersey, north to the River Ribble. North of the Ribble was officially Yorkshire in the Domesday Survey. Lancashire was almost wholly the domain of Count Roger of Poitou, third son of the great Earl Roger de Montgomery II, the seignior of Montgomerii in the arrondissement of Lisieux in Normandy. Roger of Poitou (sometimes Pictavencis, Pictavis or, in the West Riding, known as Roger le Poitevin). Those extensive and rich holdings in the West Riding of Yorkshire were grants made by Duke William of Normandy in reward for his

father's, Roger de Montgomery's assistance at the Battle of Hastings. Roger de Montgomery II was in command of a wing at the Battle of Hastings, but returned to Normandy with Queen Matilda, and the young Duke Robert as Duke William's representative. He became head of the council that governed the Duchy of Normandy in Duke William's absence in England. The Norman Montgomery family ancestry was closely interwoven either by blood or marriage with the Duchy of Normandy. Roger de Montgomery had four sons. Eldest was Robert, Count of Alencon, and his successor in Normandy. He was followed by Hugh, who inherited the Earldom of Arundel, Chichester and Shrewsbury, the life custodian of the main family domains granted in England. These would eventually go to Robert in 1098, purchased from William Rufus for 3000 pounds. Next youngest was Count Roger de Poitou who was made the first Earl of Lancaster by Duke William of Normandy, a less magnanimous grant which befitted the third youngest son. Philip, the youngest, remained in Normandy and accompanied Duke Robert on the first crusade to the Holy Land, and died there in 1094. At the time of the Norman Conquest in 1066 the County of Lancashire had not yet been defined, but its subsequent components already existed as administrative areas.

Six or seven years after the conquest (1072/3) King William gave the land between the Ribble and the Mersey, together with Amounderness to Roger of Poitou. In the early 1090s King William II (William Rufus) added Lonsdale, Cartmel and Furness to Roger's estates, thereby giving him control of all the land between the river Mersey in the south and the river Duddon in the north. Roger chose Lancaster as the site for his castle, which thereby became the centre of administration for the lands that he controlled. As the area of lands held by a lord were known as his 'honour', Roger's lands became known as the Honour of Roger of Poitou or the Honour of Lancaster.

In 1102 Roger supported his brother Robert of Bellene in an unsuccessful rebellion against King Henry I and all his English estates were confiscated and given to Stephen of Blois, the grandson of the Conqueror.

In 1168 Lancashire was first termed 'the county of Lancashire' under King Henry II. In 1267 Edmund Crouchback was created 1st Earl of Lancaster.

In 1351 Henry, Earl of Lancaster, was made a Duke and was also granted Palatinate powers - the royal powers, or the powers belonging to the palace.

These powers lapsed with Henry's death, but were restored to the most famous Duke of Lancaster, John of Gaunt and were made hereditary.

Palatinate status was granted to Lancashire because of its strategic position in defending England from the Scots and conferred legal recognition of the extraordinary powers of the Duke within Lancashire. The county developed its own chancery, could issue writs under its own seal and even had its own dating year running from 6th March 1351, the

date of the establishment of the palatine. The Duke was able to appoint his own sheriff who was answerable to the Duke, not the King. Lancaster had its own justices and the king's writ did not run within the palatine county. The king did however still collect the taxes and reserved the right to correct 'errors of judgement' in the duke's courts.

Lancashire was not a rich county. Coastal marsh was gradually replaced eastward by forest to the Penines. It was administered militarily by Hugh Lupus, the great Earl of Chester who also held most of the northern coast of Wales and both sides of the Dee, the Wirral and eastern Cheshire.

During the northern Norman Baron's rebellion in 1069/70, Duke William of Normandy and his army of 40,000 men reduced parts of Cheshire, most of Lancashire, and north to the Scottish border, and (Yorkshire in the East and West Ridings), Cumberland and Northumberland. The land was left waste, most buildings having been reduced to rubble. Remaining habitation was spotty and not well recorded in the Domesday Book, particularly in the northern counties. However, Roger de Poitou seems to have survived, probably because of his father's influence, although his holdings were considerably reduced by the time of the taking of the Domesday Survey in 1086. In 1081 he lost two important Lancashire lordships, Crosby and Warrington (now Cheshire) to the Norman Villers family, ancestors of the Traffords. He still retained as an under-tenant, however, and held in chief some 45 coastal holdings from West Derby north to the Ribble, generally known as the Argarmeles (located approximately in the Southport area). Most of the land north of the Ribble, north to Heysham, had been retrieved and was now held directly by the King. This land immediately north of the Ribble, including Preston, Ribchester and Lancaster, holdings classified as being in Yorkshire, was administered by Earl Tosti, under-tenant of the King but Roger de Poitou had some remaining influence. Little is known of Tosti. He may have been recruited from Normandy after the 1070 rebellion, but does not appear to be related to the notable Norman Tosni family. The population of Lancashire (south of the Ribble) at the Domesday Book was probably less than 2,000 and mostly confined to the coastal area within 20 miles of the Irish Sea except for Warrington, Salford, Rochdale and Manchester. North of the Ribble in the hundreds known as Amounderness there was over 60 holdings and was slightly more heavily populated. But 45 settlements were waste, many still held by Roger de Poitou. Cheshire, to the south, was comparatively heavily populated and rich in holdings.

It was not until 1182 that Lancashire became a county. Meanwhile, at the time of the Domesday Book in 1086, Manchester was held by St.Mary's Church. Salford and Rochdale by Roger de Poitou. Present metropolitan boroughs of Manchester, Wigan, Bury, Oldham, Tameside, Trafford and Stockport were not identified. Manchester was also partly held by St.Michael's Church. Liverpool was not identified. Most of the coastal area north to the Ribble was also held by Roger de Poitou. He also held the following inland area's: Blackburn, Dalton, Cockerham, Hurlston, Leyland,

Penwortham, Newton le Willows, Rochdale, Skelmerdale, Up and Down Holland, and Preston. Habitation and settlements in central Lancashire were sparse unless they were deliberately ignored by the Domesday as having been wasted by Duke William in 1070 in his scorched earth sweep. Most of the rest of southern Lancashire was held directly or indirectly by the King, and almost all of northern Lancashire, including Heysham, Furness, Bardsea, Bispham, Marton (now Blackpool), Warton (Carnforth) and Lytham.

4- Sir Richard de Dalton I; was the son of John 2nd, who was a crusader in 1187 with King Richard I, and killed several Saracens in the Holy land and from that the Dalton family took the green griffin in its crest. He returned home, married and had a son. He is buried at Dalton with his legs crossed". He inherited all his father's estates. This Sir Richard had a son he named Richard II.

Let me tell you about the life of a Knight.

The Great Knight's of England:

The story of the Great Knights of England goes back to the time of the Plantagenet Kings. Under which everyone with a certain income was required to take up the status of a Knight. It was an indirect form of taxation. In this way the Crown had the full support of these Knights and all they're many men and wealth.

These Knights were given a great amount of land and titles for they're many services they provided to whichever King was in power. The title of Sir was one, which implied possessions as well as knighthood. And from the fact that from the beginning we find our "Dalton's" owners of lands, holding good positions, forming good family alliances, and bearing fashionable Norman names, it looks more than likely that they were of Norman origin. They took their titles from Old Saxon manors or lordships.

History of Knights:

Like most periods in history, the era of knights evolved gradually. The term "knight" originates from the Anglo-Saxon name for a boy: "cniht". Indeed, most early knights were not much more than hired "boys" who offered military service and loyalty to whatever well-to-do nobleman or warlord that offered the most promise of money or war booty.

In the chaos and danger of post-Roman Western Europe, the population had very little protection from brigands and conquering warbands. It soon became apparent there was safety in numbers, and local lords (who could afford it) gathered around them young, fighting-age men to fend off rebellious vassals or conquering neighbors. These men, in turn, were rewarded with war booty for their service and loyalty. Soon, grants of land

were made so the young soldiers could receive an income from those lands and afford the high cost of outfitting themselves with the accoutrements of war, such as horses, armor, and weapons. The era of the medieval knight had begun.

It wasn't long before knights began to treat their land grants as hereditary rights (usually transferring ownership to the eldest son upon death), and thus began the rise of knights as a "landed" class whose importance went beyond simply being a military "free-agent". Knights soon found themselves involved in local politics, the dispensation of justice, and numerous other required tasks for their sovereigns, or liege lord.

On becoming a Knight:

To become a knight, you had to go through three stages; page, squire, and knighting. When a boy turned 7, they would leave home and start their training for knighthood. As a page, he joined the household of another knight or a nobleman. There they would train him how to use and handle small weapons. They also taught him manors, and behaviors of a knight. Then at 15 or 16 they would advance to squire. In this position he would be a servant to the knight who had become his master. Training progressed and advanced to that of a mounted soldier. This would come in handy when he was called to assist his knight in battle. This would usually last around five years. Then the squire was eligible for knighthood. Any knight could bestow knighthood on another.

Taken to his lord and kneels, and a knight dubs the new knight by tapping him on the shoulder with his sword, then delivers the accolade by saying something like: "In the Almighty's name, I dub you a knight. Be worthy, valiant and humble". Led out of church, hailed with cheers and the new knight eats breakfast. Later in the day the new knight goes to the courtyard, where the others await him. Two loud trumpets, singers, priests and monks, Knight followed by all present to the grounds by the garden to a platform covered with carpets. Sponsor kisses knight, puts spurs on him. 2nd and 3rd sponsors put on his steel hauberk and helmet. 4th sponsor puts sword on the knight and says, "use it worthily". Moral instruction and encouragement offered and the new knight takes the oath of knighthood, declares his commitment to justice and faith. Music begins. Leaves platform, runs to horse and leaps onto its saddle. Crowd applauds; his squire brings his lance and shield. There is a jousting tournament in his honor the next day.

Feasts were held in his honor, with singing and music. His attire laid out for guests to see: Spotless white shirt, costly robe of ermine, golden spurs. Bathes and dresses: white shirt, brown silk hose, white outer-girdle and crimson robe. To chapel of parish church and prays all evening, stands or kneels for 10 hours. Lamp on altar, large candles beside alter. Weapons and armor on alter. Mass the next morning.

In medieval history, the knight was an armed and mounted warrior belonging to the nobility. The incessant private warfare that characterized medieval times brought about a permanent military class, and by the 10th century the institution of knighthood was well established. The knight was essentially a military officer, although with the growth of feudalism the term tended to denote the holder of not only a position in the ranks of nobility but also in the ranks of landholders. The knight generally held his lands by military tenure; thus knight service was a military service, normally expected by an overlord in exchange for each fief held by a knight. All military service was measured in terms of knight service, and a vassal might owe any number of knight services.

Although all nobles of military age were necessarily knights, knighthood was earned through some exploit involving the use of arms. In the late Middle Ages the son of a noble would serve first as page, then as squire, before being made a knight. Knighthood was conferred by the overlord with the accolade (a blow, usually with the flat of the sword, on the neck or shoulder); in the later period of feudalism, the ceremony was preceded by the religious ceremony of a vigil before an altar. A knight fighting under another's banner was called a knight bachelor; a knight fighting under his own banner was a knight banneret. Knights were ordinarily accompanied in battle by personal attendants (squires and pages) and by vassals.

Tournaments provided a means for knights to practice warfare and build their strength in times of peace. Tournaments were essentially mock battles with audiences. The audience was usually made up of "fair damsels". This was another way in which a knight was expected to act chivalrous. The tournaments had different rules that had to be followed. They were judged by umpires that watched for dishonest play. Tournaments were usually fought between either two people or two teams. If two people fought a tournament, it was usually by jousting. The two knights would gallop across the playing field at each other. They carried long, blunt poles and shields. The objective was to knock the other person out of his saddle. Team play was conducted with fierce mock combat between two bands of fighters. They fought with wooden or blunted weapons so as to reduce the risk of getting hurt. However, this was often not the case. Many people did get hurt or die by accident.

Life of a Knight:

The new knight now served his liege lord (which may or may not be the king himself), bound to offer military service up to 40 days a year in peace time, more, as needed, in war time. Military duties included castle guard, serving in the lord's "bodyguard", and participating in battle.

Apart from military duties the knight could also participate in administering justice, managing his estates (which was his prime source of income), and continuing to hone

his combat skills in tournament.

Heraldry (symbols identifiable with individuals or families) originated as a way to identify knights in battle or in tournaments. With the advent of the "great" or "barrel" helm (ca. early 13th century) an individual's face became concealed. It therefore became necessary to create a method to distinguish ally from enemy.

Heraldic symbols were often worn on the knight's surcoat (thus the term "coat of arms"), shield, helmet, or on a banner (standard) that could serve as a rallying point for knights and others scattered in the chaos of battle. The standard was always to be elevated as long as the battle continued, and therefore was guarded well. A standard taken down would signal the allied combatants that the cause was lost and it was time to flee the field of combat.

The career of a knight was costly, requiring personal means in keeping with the station; for a knight had to defray his own expenses in an age when the sovereign had neither treasury nor war budget at his disposal. When land was the only kind of riches, each lord paramount who wished to raise an army divided his domain into military fiefs, the tenant being held to military service at his own personal expense for a fixed number of days (forty in France and in England during the Norman period). These fees, like other feudal grants, became hereditary, and thus developed a noble class, for whom the knightly profession was the only career. Knighthood, however, was not hereditary, though only the sons of a knight were eligible to its ranks. In boyhood they were sent to the court of some noble, where they were trained in the use of horses and weapons, and were taught lessons of courtesy. From the thirteenth century, the candidates, after they had attained the rank of squire, were allowed to take part in battles; but it was only when they had come of age, commonly twenty-one years, that they were admitted to the rank of knight by means of a peculiar ceremonial called "dubbing." Every knight was qualified to confer knighthood, provided the aspirant fulfilled the requisite conditions of birth, age, and training. Where the condition of birth was lacking in the aspirant, the sovereign alone could create a knight, as a part of his royal prerogative.

Knights associated in-groups, which they called orders. They vowed loyalty to the king they fought under and formed military organizations to defend his land and property against the enemies. The knights would go on crusades throughout the land to assure this freedom for the king. Any knight in those days who became a knight also had to take religious vows to live as monks as well as defending the king.

So as you have read in the above article about, our early Dalton's had the great fortune to be Knights and therefore-upper class gentry.

The Dalton pedigree was recorded by William Flower, Norroy, King-of-Arms, at the “Visitation of Yorkshire” in 1563-4. It was a survey of all people and lands in the County of Lancashire and is among the collected papers known as the Harleian Manuscripts.

The “Visitation of Yorkshire” gives genealogical information showing the Lancashire Dalton's and the Yorkshire Dalton's united by the common ancestor, and as there is confirming evidence about the earliest members, we can safely accept the pedigree as being more or less true.

The name of “Duchy of Lancashire” played a very large part in our Dalton family history through out the greater part of time in England and later on in South Wales.

Life was the same at the Dalton Manor in the little village of Dalton. This was before Sir Richard went on his Crusade with King Richard.

Richard, “The Lionheart” and his Crusade:

In the year 1187, the Muslim leader Saladin re-conquered the city of Jerusalem as well as most of the Crusader strongholds throughout the Holy Land. In response, the kings of Europe including Frederick Babarossa of Germany (who died on route), Phillip of France and Richard I of England (the Lionheart) mounted a campaign to rescue the city. The Third Crusade was underway.

Key to the campaign's success was the capture of the port city of Acre. King Richard arrived on the scene in June 1191 to find the city under siege by a Christian army. In the distance, Saladin threatened - his army too weak to overwhelm the besiegers, but too strong to be dislodged.

Richard's progress through the Holy Land:

Intensifying the bombardment of the city, Richard and the French King, Phillip, slowly broke the city's walls, weakening its defenses while simultaneously starving the occupiers into submission. Finally, on July 12, the Muslim defenders and Crusaders agreed to surrender terms. In exchange for sparing the lives of the defenders, Saladin would pay a ransom of 200,000 gold pieces, release some 1500 Christian prisoners and return the Holy Cross. These actions were to be accomplished within one month after the fall of the city. Richard would hold 2,700 Muslim prisoners as hostage until the terms were met.

Saladin immediately ran into problems meeting his part of the bargain and the deadline came without payment of the terms. As a compromise, Saladin proposed that Richard release his prisoners in return for part of the ransom with the remainder to be paid at a

later date. Saladin would provide hostages to Richard to assure payment. Alternatively, he proposed to give Richard what money he had and allow Richard to keep the prisoners in return for Christian hostages to be held until the remainder of the money was raised and the Muslim prisoners released. Richard countered that he would accept the partial payment but Saladin must accept his royal promise to release his prisoners when he received the remainder of the ransom. Neither ruler would accept his opponent's terms. Richard declared the lives of the Muslim defenders of Acre forfeit and set August 20 as the date for their execution.



A Crusader Knight

Slaughter In The Desert:

Beha-ed-Din was a member of Saladin's court and (along with much of the Saracen army who watched from a distance) witnessed the massacre of 2,700 of his comrades:

"Then the king of England, seeing all the delays interposed by the Sultan to the execution of the treaty, acted perfidiously as regards his Musulinan prisoners. On their yielding the town he had engaged to grant their life, adding that if the Sultan carried out the bargain he would give them freedom and suffer them to carry off their children and wives; if the Sultan did not fulfill his engagements they were to be made slaves. Now the king broke his promises to them and made open display of what he had till now kept hidden in his heart, by carrying out what he had intended to do after he had received the money and the Frank prisoners. It is thus that people of his nation ultimately admitted.

In the afternoon of Tuesday, 27 Rajab, [August 20] about four o'clock, he came out on horseback with all the Frankish army, knights, footmen, Turcoples, and advanced to the pits at the foot of the hill of Al 'Ayadiyah, to which place he had already sent on his tents. The Franks, on reaching the middle of the plain that stretches between this hill and that of Keisan, close to which place the sultan's advanced guard had drawn back, ordered all the Musulman prisoners, whose martyrdom God had decreed for this day, to be brought before him. They numbered more than three thousand and were all bound with ropes. The Franks then flung themselves upon them all at once and massacred them with sword and lance in cold blood. Our advanced guard had already told the Sultan of the enemy's movements and he sent it some reinforcements, but only after the massacre. The Musulmans, seeing what was being done to the prisoners, rushed against the Franks and in the combat, which lasted till nightfall, several were slain and wounded on either side. On the morrow morning our people gathered at the spot and found the Musulmans stretched out upon the ground as martyrs for the faith. They even recognized some of the dead, and the sight was a great affliction to them. The enemy had only spared the prisoners of note and such as were strong enough to work.

The motives of this massacre are differently told; according to some, the captives were slain by way of reprisal for the death of those Christians whom the Musulmans had slain. Others again say that the king of England, on deciding to attempt the conquest of Ascalon, thought it unwise to leave so many prisoners in the town after his departure. God alone knows what the real reason was. " After all this King Richard and his surviving Knight's, including **Sir Richard de Dalton** escaped.

Sir Richard made his way back to his home in England after many months of hardship. He thought how lucky he was to be alive, as he watched so many of his comrades die!

And so life went on with this Dalton family and over the years they prospered.

5- Sir Richard de Dalton II; was the son of Sir Richard I. The below story is where historical, the Dalton family starts with the mention of **Sir Richard de Dalton II** of the Dalton/Byspham family in Lancashire. He was born in 1230 and married a Miss Lawrence, last name unknown to us.

They had 4 sons:

Sir Henry, who was the Sheriff of Lancaster in 1318.

Ralph, who was one of the senior officials in the King's Wardrobe.

Sir Robert, who was his father's heir.

Sir John, who was the founder of the Yorkshire Dalton's.

The Flower's Visitation of Yorkshire in 1563-4 gave the main pedigree of the Dalton family. It started with **Sir Richard of Byspham** born about 1230 and holding the manors of Byspham in Lancashire and Kirkby Misperton in Yorkshire. He had two sons, Sir Robert and Sir John. Sir John held the manor of Kirkby in 1332 and may have founded the Yorkshire line of Dalton's. Sir Robert was born in 1284 and died in 1350. About 1320, he married Mary, the daughter of Sir Thomas Lathom and she bore him a son, **Sir John Dalton**. Sir Robert had sided with the Earl of Lancaster who was beheaded in 1322 and Sir Robert was confined to Pontifract Castle for a time. However, his friends raised a ransom for him, so he was released and allowed to go back to his home at Byspham Manor where he now lived. In 1327, when Edward II came to the throne, the fine was returned to Sir Robert and he was made Keeper of the Royal Forests.



Pontifract Castle

Pontefract Castle is a castle in the town of Pontefract, in West Yorkshire, England. It was the site of the demise of Richard II of England, and later the place of a series of famous sieges during the English Civil War.

How did the title, “Keeper of the Royal Forests” come about.

In 1184, Henry II required local knights to undertake unpaid duties in the administration of Royal Forests. In every Forest county, four knights were appointed as Agisters to make arrangements for the feeding of swine in the sovereign's woods, and to collect "pannage" dues from those turning out pigs into the Forests. He also appointed 12 knights in each county responsible for the safekeeping of his vert and venison. These knights were the forerunners of the Verderers and Regarders (Regarders held a triennial

enquiry - the Regard - into the state of the vert, and accounted for those that trespassed upon it. They formed a central administration for the collection of royal revenue from breaches of Forest Law. He lived a busy life!

From this **Sir Richard de Dalton II** come his son, named **Sir Robert Dalton**. About this time in history the “de” was dropped and just the surname or last name started to be used.

Ralph de Dalton, another son of Richard I was the founder of the Yorkshire Dalton's. He worked for King Edward I.

The story of Ralph de Dalton starts our with these records:

Calendar of Patent Rolls, 1292-1301:
Extracted by Michael Cayley, DGS Archivist.

10 Feb 1303.

Langley. Order to all persons to be intendant to the king's clerk, Ralph de Dalton, whom the king has appointed to survey and examine t he business of the custom granted to the king from merchants of foreign parts on merchandise brought by them to the realm or taken thence, in every port, town and place beyond Trent, and to take the oath of the collectors thereof and the view of their accounts and to enquire touching the manner of the collection thereof, so that he can advisedly inform collectors touching the things that need correction, and to do and ordain all things expedient herein.

Easter Term 1327.

Essex, Herts. Ralph de Dalton, attorney of the abbot of St. Albans, comes here to account for the last voidance of the abbey and brings a patent of 3 Ed. II pardoning all payments in excess of the 1,000m. due for the first year of voidance. Agreed to inquire.

Hilary Term 1327.

Herts. Attornment of Ralph de Dalton by the abbot of S t. Albans to account for the last vacancy of the abbey.

The mystery of Ralph de Dalton:

In the June 2003 issue of the Journal of the Dalton Genealogical Society, there is a article; By Michael Cayley (DGS Librarian) about this Ralph de Dalton.

"Ralph de Dalton was one of the senior officials in the Wardrobe, though, as far as I have ascertained, he did not hold one of the other three jobs. The first mention that I have found of him is in a Patent Roll entry of 5 November 1297. He and John de Sheffield were empowered to buy 4,000 quarters of wheat and 4,000 quarters of oats for the army, which was being assembled to fight the Scots. In succeeding years Ralph was repeatedly involved in provisioning the army. He clearly enjoyed Edward I trust, and in a letter of 12th December 1298, asking the sheriff of York to gather provisions, Edward concludes; "And to accomplish, supervise, forward and diligently procure all these things, we send to you our dear clerk, Ralph de Dalton, to whom you may give credence upon these matters, according to what he will tell you more fully for us"

Some of the orders about army provisions reek with a level of detail and precision, which exemplifies the bureaucratic mind down the ages, but also illustrates the constant problem of provisions going bad. A Patent Roll entry of 17th January 1300 is a good example: "Mandate to the sheriff of York to purvey out of the issues of his bailiwick, except the bailiwick of Hendemesse, both from those who are indebted to the king, in allowance of their debts, and from others, within liberties and without, 1,400 quarters of wheat, 1,500 quarters of oats, 1,000 quarters of malt, 300 quarters of beans and peas, well dried and crushed. Cause the corn to be ground and well bolted, so that no bran remain, and to put the flour in good, strong and clean barrels, tightly and well beaten down, and into every barrel to put three hazel-twigs, and salt on the top, to keep the flour from going bad. To cause this to be done by lawful and experienced good men, so that it may last without going bad for a year, or, if need be, two years. To cause the above things to come to Berewyk-on-Tweed; so as to be there on Mid-summer Day at latest, to be delivered the re to the receiver of the stores. He is to pay those from whom these things are taken, or bought out of the issues of his bailiwick, and the arrears of his account, from such leviabie monies as he is answerable for, at t he Exchequer next Easter. For the taking, purchase and carriage by land or sea of these goods, he is to be allowed in his account. For the furtherance of the business, the king has sent Ralph de Dalton, king's clerk, to whom he (the Sheriff) is to give credence."

Ralph was also empowered to raise substantial bodies of troops for the Scottish wars, pay them, and resolve problems with them over bad money. So me soldiers took the king's money and just returned home. Some feudal land lords refused to supply troops. Ralph was regularly one of those appointed to investigate such affairs in the North of England, and to ensure t he punishment of offenders. He continued to be involved in matters relating to the forces fighting against the Scots until 1316. Then Edward II started to turn his attention to other matters, including internal distension 's. Ralph had to keep accounts for his expenditure, and for the debts he incurred on the king's behalf. It was a long time before some of these debts were repaid. For instance, in 1310, the Abbot of Salley "lent" five oxen, five cows and forty sheep. One assumes the "loan" ended up in military stomachs. But by 1317 the Abbot had still not received payment.

Ralph's duties extended to finance. On 21st November 1301, he was appointed to collect the levy of the fifteenth in Northumberland. In 1303, he audited the operations of the collectors of customs dues in the North of England. In 1304, he, John de Insula and Richard de Havering assessed another tax, the tallage, in Yorkshire and Northumberland.

In Northumberland a Richard de Dalton helped them. He was probably a relative of Ralph, who was a more junior official in the Wardrobe. In November 1303, Ralph was sent to tell the Bishop of Ely to place on deposit money which the Bishop owed, probably on behalf of the king, to merchants of the Florentine firm of Spini.

Being a royal official did not guarantee safety, even in England. The Patent Rolls contain a commission of 20th July 1303, for Richard de Havering and Ralph de Dalton to investigate an attack in which other officials of the Wardrobe were robbed of money, which they were conveying to Edward I in Scotland.

Given the Dalton links with Thomas of Lancaster, perhaps the most interesting duty entrusted to Ralph de Dalton was to act in 1322, as one of the auditors of the accounts for the lands and goods confiscated in the North of England from Thomas and his supporters. There is no explicit proof that Ralph was a member of the Bispham Dalton family, but this seems very probable, given that by 1322, William, son of Robert de Dalton, was already an official in the Wardrobe. On 30th March 1324, the king granted to William, the livings of Bulwell in Nottinghamshire and Croston in Lancashire. William is likely to have obtained his position in the royal household through Ralph's influence. Anyway, it seems unlikely that two Daltons had overlapping periods of service in the Wardrobe without being related. If he was one of the Bispham Daltons, Ralph will have faced a conflict of interest in his role as auditor of the confiscated lands. But auditors were not then subject to regulation of the kind, which has caused discomfort to some major firms recently.

If we look at Ralph's career, we find that all his recorded functions were carried out in the North of England. This is what the medieval records call "beyond Trent", since the river Trent marked the administrative boundary between the north and south of the realm. Ralph appears to have been either the only representative of the king's staff in the North, or one of the top representatives. He probably retired shortly before 1327, when we find him seeking to get his final accounts for provisioning the royal armies signed off. By then William de Dalton, destined to rise even further, was well ensconced in the royal household."

Sir John de Dalton, another son of Sir Richard II was the founder of the Yorkshire Dalton family. His story reads like this:

As per FLOWERS VISITATION OF YORKSHIRE, Sir John de Dalton, the second son of Sir Richard Dalton II was the founder of the Kirby Misperton, Yorkshire Dalton line.

John de Dalton, a bailiff of Pickering Castle, led 300 tenants clad in forest green against Scarborough and then on to Lancashire and on to attack Sir Adam Banaster and the royal forces in the North in support of Thomas Earl of Lancaster their overlord.

The Earldom of Lancaster was granted in 1267 to Edmund Crouchback, second son of King Henry III. This was the core of the later and betterknown Duchy of Lancaster. As well as the Honor, County, Castle and Town of Lancaster, Edmund received many other great estates, including the Castle, Manor and Forest of Pickering and the Manors of Scalby, Easingwold and Huby in Yorkshire. Crouchback died at Bayonne in 1297. The title and estates passed to his eldest son, Thomas, Earl of Lancaster.

Thomas was Earl in the later years of the reign of King Edward I, and the early years of the reign of King Edward II. He became the richest Earl: his income has been estimated at £11,000 a year, after 1311, when his marriage brought him much of the great Lacey estate. His household expenses were over £7,500 in each of the years 1313-14 and 1318-19. A considerable staff managed his estates, organized in seven large honors and three bailiwicks, which included such castles at Pontefract, Tutbury, Leicester, Lancaster and Pickering. The principal task of the estate officers was raising income for the Earl.

Each castle had a keeper and each major estate a receiver and a steward. In a later day and age, the Constable of Pickering Castle was also Master of the Forest and not infrequently also Steward of the estate. There are signs that such a merger of offices may already have taken place. John de Dalton was keeper of Pickering Castle for Thomas Earl of Lancaster! At the same time, he was Bailiff of the Liberty of Pickering and had custody of the forest of Pickering. He was specifically referred to as "Bailiff and Receiver of Pickering" when rendering his account at Pontefract! He was referred to as a past Constable of the Castle and Warden of the Forest in 1336.

As Constable, Dalton was responsible for raising, equipping and mustering the freemen of the liberty for war, when required to do so by the King or the Earl. As Bailiff he received the Earl's rents not merely in Pickering itself but throughout the liberty of Pickering Lythe. This district extended from the river Derwent to the crest of the North York Moors beyond Goathland, and from Sinnington near Kirkby Moorside as far as the coast near Scarborough and Filey. Within its bounds were many other manors and monastic estates. The Bailiff served all writs and summonses in the Liberty on behalf of the Earl, instead of the King's Sheriff. As Receiver, Dalton collected some rents and received others from the local reeves. As Warden of the Forest of Pickering, he had to account for all deer taken and for all major trees felled in the wood and that sustained them. He might make arrests for significant breaches of forest law. In practice, he was

the head of a sizeable local organization of foresters, verderers, agisters, regards and other officers of the forest, whose powers ran' " thro ughout the same district, regardless of any powers possessed by local lords of manors.

Dalton's duties seem to have gone beyond administration. He executed significant policy changes for the Earl. New judgments' on several customary procedures were alleged in the chorus of complaints against actions taken during his time. Once the Earl was dead, the local freemen petitioned the King and Council claiming that free men had been fined for alienating land held of a chief lord, contrary to common law and the customs of the man or of Pickering. The rights of mesne lords to take fines for breaches of the assize of ale had been denied. Mesne tenants had been forced to attend more courts or were fined. Earl Thomas had stopped his tenants attending other men's courts. Freemen had been fined without legal writs and denied the right to attorneys. Such overthrowing of custom, if all the assertions were true, was hardly likely to be the result of a local official's decisions for his own gain, but rather the response to the general pressure being exerted by the Earl to raise more income from all of his estates.

We might well ask how the career developed that ended with such responsibilities. The question cannot yet be answered. John is said to have been t he second son of Sir Richard Dalton of Bispham in Lancashire. Movement between the scattered estates of great men was a feature of early career paths and he may have gained experience at Lancaster before coming to Pickering. Clearly he was literate and could keep accounts, but, unlike many of Lancaster's officials, he was not a clerk in holy orders. He employed his own clerk! It is surprising, almost disconcerting, to find John de Dalton and William le Lung on a jury of men of the city and suburbs of York about St Nicholas hospital in 1275. It is interesting that a John de Dalton p aid Is 6Y2d tax at Kirkby Ravensworth in the Liberty of the Blessed Mar y, where a Robert Long pays 93l.d in the year 1301. That Liberty belonged to the Abbey of St. Mary's, York. The estate was in the district of Gil ling West and Richmondshire. He or . another John de Dalton paid 6s 10d, t he largest sum paid by anyone, at Wyclifte, not far away. No Dalton paid tax at Pickering in that year and the date of his arrival there is not know n. When John de Dalton was warden of Pickering forest, in 1306, his appraisals of the value of forfeited animals are entered in the accounts by h is clerk Roger the Long. Within a short list of tenants of the "sake" of Pickering in 1327-8, John Dalton and a William the Long both pay 5s tax. A little later, John Dalton would tenant a Kirkby Misperton manor from St Mary's Abbey. (It may or may not be relevant that a Dalton township forms part of the parish of Kirkby Ravensworth).

John Dalton's salary for his Pickering offices was ten pounds a year, but his, accommodation, food and clothing were provided and there were many perquisites, expenses and rewards in kind. His household included pa id servants. There was much traveling with instructions and deliveries. The Earl's later visits to Pickering Castle seem

to have been infrequent, only definitely recorded in September 1307 and 1314. However, an early visit by the Countess Alice might be presumed, for on 24th, August 1310, Archbishop Greenfield of York issued a mandate to the Chapter of York to cite the persons who had assaulted an esquire of Countess Alice in Pickering church. Dalton frequently sent messengers with letters to the Earl and others or received those bringing orders from his lord. His clerk spent five days on a visit to the Bishop of Durham about the wardship of a local manor. When the Parliament met at York, a well-protected convoy was formed to take £120 to pay the Earl's creditors. Roger the clerk accompanied the money with two horsemen and four footmen. The Constable also owed himself ten shillings expenses when he went to Nostell Priory on the Earl's command and to Pontefract about the Earl's affairs. When Dalton killed fourteen "harts of grease" in the forest, he took them to York for the Earl.

John de Dalton handled a total Pickering estate income approaching £5 00 in the year, a significant part of the Earl's revenues. He was also responsible for spending a good deal of it. His accounts for the year from September 30 1313 to the same date in 1314 are extant. They include the returns submitted to him by the Reeves of Easingwold and Pickering and tell us obliquely of some of the detail of local life. The incomes included rents and fines, from barons, freemen, bondmen, cottagers, burgesses and tenants at will, other sums for leasing demesne lands, water mills and market tolls, more monies paid instead of doing labour services and small incomes from iron smelting and tolls of fairs. There was a gift of ten pounds for the Earl from the Abbot of Rievaulx and a small rent of seven pence from Robert the Long and Nicholas Skinner.

Sums called the "issues" of the Manor and the Forest were also paid to John. His administrative expenditures were set against them in his accounts. Wapentake courts and Sheriffs "tours" met for the district probably presided over by the Constable himself, as well as the "Halmote" courts, with more local pre-occupations. He bought parchment for the rolls on which the Forest and the Wapentake court records were kept. Taxes were levied on people's assets for the Earl whenever the king took a tax. Tenants also paid "relief", a sort of inheritance tax to enable heirs to follow parents in their tenancies. Forest poachers and other offenders were fined and some were released on bail to await a higher court judgment. Prisoners were charged for their keep. Stray cattle, horses and sheep were driven to a pound and either returned after a fine and a charge for fodder or sold off. Small sales included wreck timber from the coast, the pasture of the castle ditch and ewe's milk.

The early Forest of Pickering had been organized to keep the deer and wild boar for the king's hunting and the king's table and to limit destruction of the woodland that gave them cover. This was still basically the case, but the balance had changed and as much attention was now given to raising the Earl's incomes. Those who took deer were heavily fined but no longer lost body parts, although a summary execution by foresters had

occurred as recently as 1282. Within the Forest preserves, new intakes were allowed and let as farming land. Pasture was being "agiste" rather than kept free for the deer and so leased for cattle, sheep and swine, even on the high moor. Great timbers were felled for house building while dry wood, brushwood, heather, ironstone, building stone and tree bark were sold. Dogs which might damage deer were no longer totally prohibited, indeed dog licenses brought in a useful £42.16s 6d in one year. Dalton's clerk collected the pannage payments for pigs allowed to run in the woods. The Pickering manor demesne arable land was now let to tenant farmers but valuable parks and meadows were kept in hand to sustain the deer and a stud of horses. Dalton managed the remaining demesne meadows, employing workers for mowing, tending, making and cocking hay from more than eighty acres of meadow in blocks distant from the castle. Ten acres of meadow were specifically reserved for the bailiff's horses. Wages went to those stacking the carts and the man who thatched the haystack. The hay was used mainly to sustain the deer in winter, particularly those concentrated in the walled deer park at Blansby, north of the Castle and in the hedged "hay s" at Dalby and Scalby. Since there was no castle arable remaining, a mixture of grains called "mas/in" was bought to pay the Blansby park keeper in kind. Dalton in 1313-14 had much of the stone park wall rebuilt, deer shelters made, boughs felled and taken with hay to the park to sustain the deer through the winter.

The Constable had significant receipts from the Castle sheep flocks, which ranged the high moors alongside monastery flocks and those of small farmers. The two shepherds brought them down for washing and shearing. Some 54 wethers, 50 ewes and 24 lambs were sold before shearing but 628 others were dealt with by the stock master. Three great sacks and a further three and a half stone more of good wool were carded and stocked in the Castle wool house ready for inspection by merchants. Another 63 skins and 7 carcasses and three stone of tangled wool were sold. There remained 473 withers, 86 ewes 53 hogs and 49 lambs. Of the 625 fleeces taken, 54 were paid as tithe to St Mary's abbey. The stock master went to Ripon fair to buy 84 new withers but the Stewards clerk, the reeve and his clerk all joined him on the journey to Rothwell to render their accounts to the Earl's Wardrober.

Much of Dalton's time was spent at the hunt, if statements that he took deer mean what they say. Hunting was the main pre-occupation of his class. In his whole period of office as Constable and Keeper of the forest, John de Dalton took 134 harts and 158 hinds, bucks and does, mostly on the instructions of the Earl. The majority were dispatched to the Earl's larder, even 24 to Teignmouth when the Earl was briefly there. Others were sent as gifts to people named by the Earl, as rewards and favours, some to such significant people in their castles as Lady Joan Comyn at Malton, Lord Wake at Kirkby Moorside, Lord Mennel at Whorlton and William de Ros at Helmsley. Gifts went to such national figures as the Bishop of Ely and Aymer de Valence.¹⁴ Regular dispatches of a

tenth of the annual catch were sent as tithe to St Mary's Abbey, York. As Master of the Game, John de Dalton was himself allowed to kill three hinds, three calves, two fallow deer and two roe deer to give away as he wished. He claimed to take none for himself but his gazehounds did once seize four small deer and he was unable to rescue them alive.

Dalton's management of the forest timber was just as cautious. Local people had rights to timber for specific purposes, called "botes", usually taken under a forester's supervision, such as ploughbote, cartbote and hedgebote. In a different category were the large number of oaks delivered to several important people. There may have been some discretion for the constable but the Earl's permission must be presumed for such deliveries as 36 oaks to the Dean of York, a prominent Pickering churchman of the Brus family, who was building a house. John Dalton had a house built at Lockton for Edmund Crauncester using another 28 oaks, deliberately felled to serve as the huge crotch timbers that would support a great ridge beam, in the local John de Dalton Page 22 building style. When Hugh de Quilly was sent to Pickering castle to reside as one of a garrison, about 110 oaks were felled to use in fortifications and as fuel, apparently over a four year period.

Too much may be made of the complaints later made against the officers of Thomas Earl of Lancaster. There are some signs that Dalton's administration proceeded without too much fear or favour. Great forest droves were made in 1310-11. Many plough animals of St Mary's Abbey tenants were found in the Forest beyond their own precincts. They were seized and Earl Thomas ordered their delivery to the Abbot bailiffs for £22.12s. Another cluster of beasts from Lord Wake's Cropton-Middleton estates west of Pickering were found within the forest. It was later claimed that Wake's tenants immediately paid the sums at which they were appraised to John de Dalton, the Constable, and Roger the Long, the constable's clerk. During a Saturday in July 1312, John son of "Abbas of Rosedale" wounded a hart in Whitby forest and trailed it with bow and arrow over the Pickering forest boundary. Dalton found the wounded hart, took it with his own gazehounds and carried it to Pickering castle. Complaints that Dalton himself took too many deer were reasonably answered but he was fined for excess.

Nicholas at the bridge of Pickering certainly thought he had a grievance against the Constable. He complained to the King & Council that Dalton wrongfully used the powers of his office to arrest him in the town and imprison him in his house from the 27th of May 1319 until Saturday the 14th June. On his account, Dalton claimed that Nicholas owed the Earl over £10 for arrears and default of services and obliged him to surrender a property deed for his land before letting him out. Nicholas denied any arrears or defaults and considered John was after his land. He claimed damages of £40. The case went to chancery but we don't know the verdict, let alone the rights and wrongs of the matter.

Pickering people later claimed that in the time of Earl Thomas "many strange things were done by the bailiffs, verderers, and foresters, in prejudice of the rights of the Crown such as purprestures and enclosures to the great destruction of the game". Foresters felled oak trees without number. The "people of the country were beggared while foresters were rich in lands tenements and fine manors" though "when they came into the country they had nothing but their bows and arrows and the clothes they walked in". However, when these complaints were made, the estate had passed back to the Crown. If Earl Thomas had felled trees and killed game, they had been his own, to do with whatever he wished. Nor were Pickering people particularly minded to the defiance of Crown assets. There is clear resentment of the Lancaster men, but it was perhaps just sour grapes against incomers. Few charges were made directly against John de Dalton, and even in our own day it is usual to lay much blame on fallen administrations.

King Edward II co-operated in Papal moves to destroy the power of the semi-monastic military order of Knights Templars. Originally formed to support pilgrims to the Holy Land, they had become wealthy and their wealth was wanted. The suppression of the English Templars began in 1308. They had manors within the Pickering Honor at Foulbridge, Lockton and Allerston. Foulbridge occupied a low lying site in Pickering Vale below Snainton, where a preceptor, chaplain, servants and visiting knights occupied a fine aisled Hall, probably rebuilt c.1288, a chapel, water and windmills, three granaries and other good buildings amidst 280 acres of arable, 40 acres of meadow and much good pasture within a ring fence farm, near a Derwent toll bridge. This was a highly desirable estate. Earl Thomas of Lancaster as overlord resumed the property by right of "escheaf". At an unknown date, he granted the Foulbridge manor to John de Dalton for life, with reversion to the Earl! John "agisted" other people's animals at Foulbridge but there is no other evidence known for his use of the property. He appears to have held the estate till 1324 when King I Edward granted it to the Knights Hospitallers!

John Dalton's responsibilities broadened in 1314. Thomas Earl of Lancaster was the nephew of King Edward I and cousin of King Edward II. Born about 1278, he was married to Alice de Lacy, daughter of Henry Lacy, Earl of Lincoln in c.1294. She appears to have been somewhat younger than Thomas. This was a dynastic union of estates as much as persons. She remained childless and would leave him in 1317. During the year 1313-1314, the Countess Alice was quartered in Pickering Castle with a separate household. Dalton was the Constable with many arrangements to make.

Seven letters of instructions came from the Earl in the year and Earl Thomas himself visited the Castle, perhaps briefly, while she was there. Seven oaks were felled for them and for building works in the castle. The outer gate and its bridge and several castle apartments were repaired. The Hall windows were mended and a new bucket purchased for the well. Dalton had eighty planks bought at Easingwold and laid in the gangway

leading from the Countess's chamber to the chapel. Fuel was brought for her household from several Pickering woods. John de Dalton paid £112.15s to Master Richard Warmington, the clerk of her household, on one occasion. Her total spending during her stay at Pickering was £285.13s 4Y2d, some of which was pantry, buttery and kitchen purchases including a substantial quantity of wine.

That same year, a new hall with a chamber was built in the castle, probaby to house the Countess in a manner more suitable to her station. This was a major building work, quite possibly of the largest hall yet built in north east Yorkshire. The ground was leveled where an old bake house had burnt down. Four hundred cartloads of stone made the walls. Soil was brought in to make mortar with twenty-seven quarters of lime. With the masonry complete, joiners erected planks and joists, doors and windows, using 1,680 nails, 20,000 tacks, 22 door hinges, 28 window hinges and 2 ,600 laths. The building was roofed with thin flags, the gaps between were filled with moss. The floor and walls of the Countess's upper room and chamber were plastered and a fine plaster chimney-piece was made. The chaplain supervised the workers. Dalton paid the bills, totaling £341. The lower walls of the wide hall survive still near the chapel, with parts of doorway and window masonry, fireplaces and seats, but the columns that must have supported the wide roof have gone.

Earl Thomas became the leader of the baronial opposition to King Edward II's favourite, Piers Gaveston, from 1309. This brought Dalton into service as a military commander in the field as well as a castle constable. It is surprising that when he witnessed a charter in 1320-21 concerning Great Habton manor, along with some of the principal men of the district, he is not among the knights and he may not have held that status. Ano her John in a charter of 1366 about the same manor had been knighted! The forces he commanded sound small but were typical of much medieval warfare. By 1311, the Earl and his Constable were in virtual rebellion. Dalton arrayed local men and took them to York in 1312 and with several earls pursued the King and Piers to Newcastle on Tyne. Edward ordered Scarborough Castle victualed and over £34 spent there on springalds and other equipment. When Lancaster reached the Newcastle on May 4, 1312, the King and his friend had sailed for Scarborough. The monarch left Gaveston in that strong castle, believing him secure. John de Dalton led three hundred of the Earl's tenants, "clad in forest green" to besiege the King's Scarborough castle. Nothing has been found to confirm the local Pickering leg end that when Dalton's force-marched to take Scarborough Castle, a Scarborough force marched on Pickering, one taking the high road and one the low road. After about ten days, it appeared that neither Gaveston's forces nor his supplies were adequate. He was persuaded to accept easy surrender terms after negotiations in a borough Friarage, with a promise of safe conduct. Soon afterwards, Piers Gaveston was killed.

This was not Dalton's only campaign. He led the local force, enhanced by other levies, to Lancashire in 1315 "to take Sir Adam de Banastre and his force and put them to death"

A chronicler claimed that the Earl's force was 600 while Bannaster, who had rebelled against the Earl, had 80. After the Earl of Lancaster's death, there were Yorkshire complaints that Dalton's officers forced others who were the King's subjects "by their violence and imprisonment" to go with the Earl's people. The next year, in 1316, Dalton was directed to raise the men of the liberty for the King. There is no evidence that he did so. Lancaster and the King were again at odds. Pickering men went to Pontefract the next year whence the Earl attacked Earl Warenne's castles. Warenne had persuaded Lancaster's wife Alice to leave him. These were the decades in which Scots raids were harrying much of the north, but Lancaster refused to array against the Scots and may have had agreements with them. His Pickering tenants would complain that the bailiff and other officers required them to rebel often against the King but they were never arrayed against the Scots.

The earl's officers led the Pickering vale men to besiege Tickhill Castle in 1322. The enmity of King and Earl was now beyond reconciliation but the balance of force shifted. Lancaster was defeated at Boroughbridge, and with many Pickering Vale men taken prisoner. He was executed on the 22nd of March 1322. Some prisoners went to Scarborough and York Castles. Sir William Latimer spent four days taking Pickering castle for the King. Dalton was put out of his offices and was imprisoned. On the 9th of April that year a royal letter of protection was issued to John Dalton of Pickering. In June, Eleanor de Percy, a kinswoman of the King, asked for his pardon, supported by the young Henry de Percy. Years earlier, John had allowed Henry's father favoured rights of hunting in the forest.

After fifteen years as the principal figure in the Honour of Pickering, Dalton had lost his offices and responsibilities but his status remained considerable. He seems to have been treated favourably by the King. The displaced constable was released from prison on the 16th July 1322 and his chattels restored but with a fine of 100 marks (£66.13s.4d.) for rebellion. Only a wealthy man could have paid that, but he didn't have to. This fine was remitted by King Edward II in person at Pickering on 11th March 1323. Three years later the king, staying at the Tower in London, signed an order for John to receive from the new constable a gift of two oaks out of Alantofts near Goathland.

Dalton may not have come to Pickering with merely his clothes, bows and arrows but he did end with a fine manor and lands. For a while he resided at Pickering, and it is possible that he had long had a house there apart from the Constable's lodgings in the Castle. When a Thomas de Collom was charged for having his three pigs in the forest

without permission in the "fence month", Dalton was named as one of the successors in his property and so was charged for the pigs. The location of his house is unknown but a case might be made for one at Keld Head, a detached hamlet where later constables had a substantial house. In 1323-4, John bought a manor and mill at Kirkby Misperton, locally known as "Kirby Owcar" or over-carr, from Richard de Kirkby, apparently that held as a tenancy of the Abbey of St Mary's York. An "Abbot's close" on later maps near the entrance to the nationally known theme park called Flamingo Park, may mark the early manor house site.

Pickering constables John Kilvington and Adam de Skelton in the following years allowed 26 more oaks to go beyond the forest bounds to John's house at Kirkby Misperton. Although the movements were duly presented as offences at the forest courts, they were not rescinded. Dalton himself moved eight more cartloads of wood there, claiming this to be within his rights of housebote and haybote for his Pickering house. The Kirkby manor house was probably being rebuilt. In these later years, we find John going surety at forest courts for others of the local manor lord class. A continuing connection between Kirkby and Pickering is evident. Among those charged with either catching hares in the forest, keeping greyhounds and carrying bows and arrows were the parson of Kirkby Misperton church and interestingly "William son of Thomas the miller of Dalton". John still pays substantial tax at Pickering in 1332.

In Dalton's period, Richard Rolle returned home to Yorkshire from his studies at Oxford, where he had been sponsored by Archdeacon Thomas Neville of Durham. Among his fellow scholars were sons of John de Dalton. He begged two dresses, white and grey from his sister and refashioned them in to a white under garment and a grey over tunic, adding his father's black rain hood. This matched the habit of an Augustinian hermit. On August 1 4th he took up Dame Dalton's place in church. When she arrived, her servants wished to turn him out but she let him stay. The next morning he preached at the mass there with some effect. The Dalton boys recognized him and John Dalton took him to dinner, gave him a room and a better costume. Later Rolle moved from the house to a hermit's "celf" on the estate, apparently for over four years. He had long conversations with Lady Dalton, "drove away the devil,," and comforted her at her deathbed, after which he may have moved away.

Scholars have differed on when and where these events took place. Rolle is said to have left Oxford in 1318 but it is also said that he was there for a time in c.1320 and again in 1326. Thornton Dale had a Rolle family and the hermit later wrote advice's to a nun at nearby Yedingham Priory. Pickering or Kirkby Misperton churches could be the scene of the events, with Pickering favoured if we accept the earlier date. The house and cell could similarly be at either place but Kirkby Misperton would hardly fit the earlier date since it doesn't seem to have had a Dalton connection then. It may be significant that an "anchorites close" is sited between Pickering and Keld Head. Rolle eventually

established himself at Hampole near Doncaster. He was credited with healings and significant mystical experiences. His translations writings were prolific and influential, including "The Fire of Love" and "The Prick of Conscience".

John de Dalton's sons, John, Thomas and Nicholas, lived at Kirkby Misperton. Their father's descendants were there until the reign of Queen Elizabeth. Their prominent ancestor weathered the collapse of an Earl for whom he worked for fifteen years and won the approval of a king he had opposed for thirteen of them. He must have been a remarkable man. We can be forgiven for feeling that there was a lot more to his story than we yet know.

6- Sir Robert Dalton; was the son of Sir Richard II. He is the first of our direct Dalton ancestor whose life is documented in some detail. He was born about 1278 in Bispham and he married Mary de Latham. They had 2 sons;

Sir John, his heir.

William, who's story is recorded below.

The documentation comes about because Sir Robert was actively engaged in public affairs during the reigns of Edward II and Edward III. Sir Robert had the upbringing appropriate to his position in feudal society and appears to have been knighted at a young age. He succeeded to his inheritance at the death of his father in 1293; owning land, largely in the Hundred of Leyland at Bispham and Dalton. Land in the latter manor was held with the Holland family. In references to Sir Robert in the official records, various members of the Holland family are often associated with activities of the Dalton's. Up-Holland their original manor is close to both Bispham and Dalton but the families were not only neighbors but very probably related. Their coat of arms were only distinguished by the cross-lets of the Dalton's and the fleur de lis of the Hollands. Mrs. Leaning produces further evidence of such a link, "in one manuscript pedigree, drawn up by an unknown hand, our pedigree it surfaced by several of the Hollands, one of them

Sir Robert was one of the knights in the train of Thomas, Earl of Lancaster Edward II's cousin. He is mentioned in various deeds relating to the Earl's affairs and another relation John de Dalton was the Earl's bailiff. The "favorite knight" of the Earl, however, was Sir Robert de Holland on whom was lavished lands and money. Sir Robert de Holland was created a Baron in 1314.

The Earl of Lancaster was one of the great landed magnates of England and he became a focal point for the growing opposition to Edward II's unsuccessful regime. The loss of Scotland and the corruption of the government by the favorites of the King, who incidentally was a homosexual, were more than many feudal notables couldn't stand and rebellion followed. Lancaster, however, made the mistake of trying to enlist the support

of the Scots and this rallied some otherwise wavering nobles to the support of the King.

Thomas, The Earl of Lancaster, had been raised to a even greater position, and was in fact among the most powerful nobles in the realm. He was of the blood royal, and within seven generations could count 5 kings as his direct ancestors, to say nothing of Rollo, duke of Normandy and Charles III of France, before William the Conqueror.

In 1320 our Sir Robert Dalton was one of the witnesses to a charter granted by the Earl and it was not at all surprising that when the Earl used force to separate the weak King from his favorites that a conclusive family like the Dalton" should be in the Earl's party. But the results were disastrous. Not all of the Earl's broad land, or his great popularity, or even his kinship with Royalty availed to save him. When a great man falls, so do other lesser one's fall with him.

The rebellion was defeated at the Battle of Boroughbridge in Yorkshire in 1322 and Sir Robert de Dalton fought with the Earl. Sir Robert de Holland, however, arrived too late with his reinforcements and then, seeing the Earl's cause was lost, wasted no time in pillaging the belongings of the Earl's supporters, taking goods to the value of £1,000. He made his peace with the King and advanced in royal favor. In 1328, however, the followers of the Earl had their revenge and he was ambushed and killed. His head was sent to the new Earl of Lancaster as a symbol of revenge.

Thus in July of 1322, we find our Sir Robert Dalton in big trouble. A order was issued by the King to Thomas Deyvill, constable of Pontefract Castle, to receive Phillip de la Beche, John de Acton, Robert Dalton and John Blaket as prisoners. Sir Robert was arrested and imprisoned in the dungeons of Pontefract Castle and his lands forfeited. The Earl was executed and many of his supporters hanged, but Sir Robert escaped with one year's imprisonment and a small fine which was after-wards canceled. The Holland connection may have helped in this respect.

During the next twelve months must have been a black year for our Sir Robert. His land had been



The Earl of Lancaster

lost, his wife and little son, living one supposes, on sufferance, and his friends clearly making frantic efforts to raise the great sum necessary for his ransom.

In August 12th, 1323, the King "ordered Richard de Mosele, Constable of Pontefract Castle to release Sir Robert, Knight, a late rebel from prison in that Castle, so that he

may come to the King to make security for his good behavior, hereafter, as certain persons have prayed the King to deliver him and to have made security for 100 marks, where-in they made fine to save the said Sir Robert's life" A week later, the King come to further order: " to John de Lancastre. Keeper of certain rebels land in the County of Lancaster to deliver to Sir Robert Dalton, Knight, his lands as he has made a ransom to the King for his life and lands. Sir Robert Dalton made good use of his restoration to favor, for three years later he is found holding the position of keeper of the Kings Royal Forest at Blakeburnshire Chase on the borders of Lancashire and Yorkshire.

Sir Robert's military talents were also put to use and he was connected with the Bishop of Durham, the Earl of Derby, Henry de Percy and Ralph de Neville, in organizing the defense of Northern England. He also served abroad since, in April 1341, he received a payment of £46 "for wages in the King's services beyond the seas".

In Nov. 1343, and to Feb. 1346, Sir Robert held the lucrative position of Constable of the Tower of London, The Kings most important prison. He was not continuously in residence there as some of the directives he received about his duties refer to Sir Robert "or to him who supplies his place there". He relinquished his position in 1346 and received a grant of the "farm revenue" of Apthorpe in Northamptonshire which amounted to 40 a year.

Leaving the Tower, Sir Robert immediately resumed his military career and joined Edward III in the invasion of France. He was present at the Battle of Crecy in 1346 and the Seige of Calais. Among his relatives and connections accompanying the King were the inevitable de Hollands, Sir William de Dalton, Controller of the King's Household and later his Treasurer, and John de Dalton, the Royal Sergeant-at-Arms.

Next came the son and heir of Sir Robert de Dalton. His name was Sir John Dalton I. This Sir John is famous in English history for being the leader of what is called Sir John's Raid.

There now took place the most dramatic incident in the Dalton's annals that ever occurred. It was known as the Sir John's Raid. Sir John was the son of Sir Robert and by this fact Sir Robert was blamed unfairly for the deed that occurred.

7- Sir John Dalton I; was the son of Sir Robert Dalton.

Here is the story of **Sir John Dalton I:**

With the aid of Baron Robert de Holland and four other Knights, Sir John Dalton I, abducted a married women from her home, killing her Uncle, a Priest and various servants, terrified some of the Royal children who were staying there and stole valuables

worth 1.000 pounds. Sir John married the lady the same day and fled northwards to take refuge with the Hollands at Up-Holland. Afterwards he got a ship to take him and the lady overseas. Sir Robert, the father however, was not so fortunate. He was arrested and sent to the Tower of London and his lands were seized, this was in 1347. Once again the Holland connection may have helped. Sir Robert was released in May 1348 and his lands restored. His wife's name is also given in the document of pardon; the only reference to her existence. She was Mary Latham, daughter of Sir Thomas Latham, a Lancashire neighbor. Sir John also emerged from the whole business more or less unscathed. In 1350 he was pardoned, and only one month later even more surprisingly was granted an annuity of £50 a year, so "that he may the better maintain himself in the King's service". The service was in the French Wars and Sir John is mentioned in connection with various incidents in the Hundred Years War. The next Dalton in line of Dalton's was also named John.

Sir John Dalton's story starts with what is known as "Sir John's Raid" This event took place because of something that happened some twenty years in the past. It must be remembered that the constant border forays with the Scots, and the war in France, had accustomed the whole body of English men-at-arms to violent and savage deeds.

This wild and wicked escapade that happened had a precedent some twenty years earlier, when the Earl Warenne of Surrey had abducted the Duke of Lancaster's bride, Alicia de Lacy and in revenge the Duke burned down his Castle.

Deeds of blood were in the air, but nothing of quite such a scale as Sir John's affair was expected to happen in England, and particularly at the time and place concerned.

Mrs. Edith Leaning (Dalton) another Dalton researcher, writes:

"Inasmuch as a scandalous outcry prevails everywhere among the people and very grievous complaint has been made to the king that John de Dalton, "chevaler"; Robert de Holand, "chevaler"; Thomas de Arden "chivaler"; Matthew de Haydok, "chevaler"; Edmund de Marneestre, "chevaler"; and others by force ravished Margery de la Beche, united in lawful matrimony to Gerard del Isle, on the holy day of Good Friday, before the dawn, at her manor at Beaumes by Redyng, where the king's son, Lionel, was then staying, within the verge of the Marshalsea of the household of the said keeper, and abducted her against her will whither they would, without reverence for God, Holy Church, or the king, and to the terror of the said keeper and the rest of the king's children then with him there, and all in those parts, and are now running to and fro that they may not be brought to justice for the felony; the king has appointed the said Gerard to arrest the said persons and all others who shall be indicted of the felony wherever found and bring them before the Council, and because Gerard fears bodily harm in the execution of the appointment from the said evil-doers, who are plotting to do him all the evil which

they can, he has granted special license for him all those of his company to go armed for their self defense. Further, he has taken him and his men and servants into his special protection and safe conduct while executing the premises"

It is evident here that the six rampaging knights, all from the North of England and under the leadership of John de Dalton had planned this raid upon Beaumes. Of them all, only John de Dalton and Gerard de l'isle (or de l'isle) had been in France together. From the expression "plotting to do him all the evil which they can" it looks as though there had been some sort of quarrel between them which, Sir John had determined to revenge.

A careful study of each of the family names concerned shows it was probably only younger sons involved in the kidnapping. For instance, Sir Thomas de Holand had been in France but not (the younger) Sir Robert; three of the Ardernes, but not (the younger) Thomas; two of the Haydoks, but not (the younger) Matthew. As for William Trussel, son of John Trussel, it is difficult to believe, but he was the Judge who had been elected to deal with the great Dispencers, however, it is possible that these are two separate men. De Mamcestre is not heard of except in this raid.

Margery de la Beche is the central figure. If a quarrel abroad were not the key to the concern, we might surmise that John had at some time seen her and wished to make her his own bride. But there is a difficulty here, for Margery had been born a Poynyngs; she had been married first to an Edmund Bacoun or Bacon, who died in 1336. In the year following, she married, secondly, Nicholas de la Beche. He was the youngest of three brothers, two of who figure among the knights of Edward 1, and had very honorable records. One of them, Philip, had been a prisoner at Pontefract with Robert de Dalton, and transferred to Scarborough. He had been Sheriff of Berkshire, Oxfordshire, and Wiltshire, and keeper of Old Sarum Castle. His brother John had been Sheriff of Hants, Notts, and Derby, and Constable of Nottingham Castle; but both being executed in 1329, Nicholas was left heir. He had been Constable of the Tower of London before Sir Robert de Dalton in 1339; and although I have not the date of his death, he must have died in or before 1347, when the raid took place, since Margery is now said to be the lawful wife of Gerard de l'isle. This Gerard was son of Warine de Lisle, governor of Windsor Castle and Keeper of the Forest, summoned to Parliament as Baron de Lisle in this same year.

It was a daring thing, therefore, to seize Margery like this. We can picture that wild ride down into the Midlands, through the night; the attack on the sleeping Manor house; the screams, the clash of arms, the shouting of the retainers and the trampling of the horses, the bloodshed and groans; and as the day broke, the misery and desolation throughout the domain. For not only was Margery gone, but old Michael le Poynyngs uncle lay dead; so did Thomas le Clerk; and Robert le Hunte, chaplain to Margery, "then lying sick there, for fear of the assault and evil deed presently died." Many another was wounded, also, for "they assaulted her men there, mutilated some so that their life was despaired

of, and imprisoned others and took them with them from the county whither so ever they would, taking on themselves the royal power." A further account refers to the breaking of the houses, and adds that the marauders "carried away goods to the value of one thousand pounds." So it was not surprising that Gerard "feared bodily harm" and that the wrong-doers were "running to and fro that they might not be brought to justice."

So to continue we find Sir John Dalton I, with the aid of Baron Robert de Holland and four other Knights, abducting Margery de la Beche from her home, killing her Uncle, a Priest and various servants, terrified some of the Royal children who were staying there and stole valuables worth £1,000. Sir John married the lady the same day and fled northwards to take refuge with the Holland's at up-Holland.

Now here are the Conspirators:

There were six Knights, all from the north of England and were under the leadership of Sir John Dalton, Knight, who staged this raid upon Beaumes.

We might surmise that Sir John had at one time, seen Margery de la Beche and wished to make her, his own. It was a daring thing, therefore to abduct Margery like this. There was the wild ride down into the Midlands through the night. The attack on the sleeping Manor house, the clash of arms, the bloodshed as the day broke, for not only was Margery gone but old Michael le Poyninges, her uncle was dead, as was many others.

While Sir John was on the run back in Northern England, he hid out in friends Manor's and farms. Most of these people were arrested and sent off to jail, including his own father, Sir Robert.

The hunt for Sir John failed and also none of his co-conspirators was ever caught. Eventually the hunt for these criminals was dropped, as the King had become extremely busy. He had the war with France to deal with and he couldn't spare any men to continue the chase. A second reason may have been because of the onset of the "Black Death" which swept over England as well as the continent and disorganized every thing.

The fate of Margery, Lady de la Beche was not so lucky. After the raid, Sir John married the lady, and as the wife of an outlaw, the King confiscated her lands. Under the date of Oct. 5th, 1348 we find from the "Patent Rolls: All the great wood in the parks, out-woods, hays, orchards and elsewhere in the Manors and lands, late of Margery, late wife of Nicholas de la Beche, now wife of John Dalton, Knight, were given an assurance that they should not be impeached or disturbed by their heir's of such sale, in spite of the out-lawery of John Dalton."

Margery Poyninges, born about 1310, died 1349. Also known as 'Lady De La Beche of

Aldworth'

Margery was the daughter of Michael, Lord De Poynings. She was first married to Edmund Bacon, of Essex, who was descended from Sir John Bacon of Ewelme, (Oxfordshire). She held the Manor of Hatfield Peverall, which Edward II had granted to Edmund Bacon in fee in 1310, for the term of her life, 'partly of the King and partly of the Earl of Hereford by homage, and the third part of a knight's fee and two pairs of gilt spurs of twelve pence price.' And she also held Cressing Hall or Cressinges, Essex.

By her first husband, Margery had one daughter, Margery Bacon, born 1337, who married, in 1352, William De Molynes, son of Sir John De Molynes, and she had also a step-daughter Margaret Bacon - daughter of Edmund Bacon, by his first wife Joan De Braose - who married William, 2nd Baron Kerdeston, of Norfolk.

As her second husband, Margery married Nicholas, Lord De La Beche of Aldworth (Berkshire) in 1339. They had no children and Nicholas died in 1345. To Margery, he left his castle of Beaumys, in Swallowfield, amongst other lands. Margery must have been still quite young and she was still a great heiress. Consequently, she was exposed to the designs of many suitors and, the following year, we find her mentioned as the wife of both Thomas D'Arderne and Gerard De L'Isle. And again, that same year, Lady Margery De La Beche was carried off and forcibly married to Sir John De Dalton. Very possibly the Black Death, which was raging this year, may have cut off Thomas D'Arderne and Gerard de L'Isle within a few months of each other.

After the raid was done, the King ordered for Sir John's arrest:

His Indictment reads: "In as much as a very grievous complaint has been made to the King that John de Dalton, Robert de Holland, Thomas de Ardern, Matthew de Haydok, William Trussel, Edward de Mamcestre and others, by force, ravished Margery de la Beche, on the Holy day of Good Friday, before dawn, at the Manor of Beaumes, where the King's son, Lionel, Keeper of England was staying, and to the terror of said keeper and the rest of the King's children, then with him there and all in those parts and are running to and fro, and that they be brought to justice for the felony. The King has appointed the said Gerard to arrest the said persons and all others who shall be indicted of the felony wherever found and bring them before the Kings Council". The date of the King's writ was March 31st, 1347 and it is followed on May 10th by a commission to certain Justices of Oyer and Terminer to place in outlawry in the county of Wiltshire, but the hunt being fairly up, John had evidently fled north.

There was meanwhile a rather premature warrant to John Darcy, Constable of the Tower, dated May 1st to receive Sir John de Dalton and 17 other prisoners. Before any of these domestic matters could be attended to, however, the Earl of Lancaster and many others

received an urgent summons to join the king as soon as possible, as "the French king is preparing to give battle before Whitsuntide" and the Mayor of London was to have ships and all manner of supplies ready.

In the commission of May 10", the name of Richard de Holand is omitted. The County History comments that in his flight north, Sir John (de Dalton) implicated various entirely innocent persons, by taking refuge temporarily, and without their knowledge, in property belonging to them. Thus, Dame Maud de Holand had a manor in the Hundred of West Derby, which was adjacent to Bispham Manor itself. Gilbert de Haydok's name is now added to the commission, but on June 19th and again on July 7th, he is pardoned, "at the request of divers magnates and others in attendance on the king, testifying that he is wholly innocent of the premises." This is dated from Calais (France), where Edward was busy replacing the French with Englishmen. Another whose name was added was Thomas de Charnels, also pardoned "on testimony by Henry, Earl of Lancaster," and because he was "wholly innocent." The Prior of Burscough, Thomas de Litheriond, had more difficulty in getting free, as it was not until November 28, 1347, that he obtained "six persons of repute" to appear in the Chancery and assert his innocence. Worst of all, Sir John's father, Sir Robert fell under suspicion, and was actually sent to the Tower, as the following entry informs us:

"July 31. Appointment of Adam de Bispeham to have the custody of the lands and goods of Robert de Dalton, 'chevaler,' now imprisoned in the Tower of London for felony, for such time as these remain in the king's hands on condition that he find sustenance for Robert, his wife and children, out of the said goods during that time. Mandate in pursuance to the Sheriff of Northampton and the escheator there. The like to the sheriff of Lancaster."

The escheator was the official receiver of all forfeited lands in whatever area he was appointed over. Sir Robert owned land in Northamptonshire as well as Lancashire. It must have been exceedingly hard on him in his old age, to come as a prisoner to the Tower, when he had previously been keeper of it. And he was there until May 28th of the following year (1348), as the entry in the Patent Rolls shows: "May 28th, 1348. Pardon to Robert de Dalton, knight for felonies and trespasses at the Manor of Beaumes by Redying, County Wilts... granted because of his good service to the king for a long time, and because it has been proved that he is guiltless of the principal perpetration of the felonies ... The like to Mary, wife of Robert de Dalton, mutatis mutandis ... By Privy Seal."

It is from the inclusion of his wife's name, extraordinary as that seems that we know that she was called Mary. The name is not given in the pedigree; only the fact that she was of the house of Lathom. The "pardon" was of course followed by the restitution of Sir Robert's lands.

The commission of May 10th, exhaustive as it seemed, had failed to catch the principal offenders, and was followed by another, the third, on June 25th. In this, seven magistrates are ordered to arrest, wherever found, in the County of Lancaster or elsewhere, our seven knights - John de Dalton, always first, William Trussell, Thomas Dardern, Haydok, de Mauncestre, de Charnels, de Dutton, Robert de Dalton 'le cosyn,' Robert, father of John, Sarah Baillop, mother of Robert de Dalton 'le cosyn,' and others. Here was a fine mix-up of the guilty with the guiltless, and a curious reason emerges for the failure to arrest hitherto, for the wrongdoers "are now, as the king is credibly informed, staying in the said County (Wilts), and this by the maintenance and assent of the said commissioners." The justice "William de Thorpe and his fellows" who is named in the commission of May 10 is now omitted; and it is possible that he was either terrorized or bribed by the band, who had the men and the plunder which they had taken from Beaumes, and had found the north too hot for them to stay in.

On July 7th yet another group of justices was appointed, but the list of those indicted has now grown to thirty-one names additional to the earlier, and some of these are clearly "of the baser sort." There is a William Lyndraper, a 'mercier,' a tailor of Loundres, and several of Lancashire places Halewod and Whritthynton. "All these are now staying and are received in divers parts of the realm," and the king orders his commissioners "to follow and arrest all the persons indicted, on pain of forfeiture of all they can forfeit, to do this with all the diligence and sollicitude which they can, and charges all sheriffs, mayors, bailiffs, and others to be assisting, obeying, and attending unto them." Even so, the end had not come, for on October 4, quite six months from the commission of the felony, the principal outlaws were still at large, as shown by the further appointment of two justices "to attack the bodies of John de Dalton" and the rest, but there are now included his mother, Mary, two brothers named de Hoicroft, Randolf, parson of the church of Bastelden, and some twelve others. They are no longer to be brought o the Tower, but committed to the custody of the keeper of the Marshalsea prison of the King's Bench.

Whether any of them were ever actually caught the records do not say; for when, after eagerly following entry after entry by means of the excellent index with which all these printed and edited volumes are provided, I found no more reference to the Raid; it seemed unbelievable. Perhaps the explanation is in the circumstances of the time. The king was extremely busy, and there is a note that the Roll was "made in parts beyond the seas of the chancery of King Edward III to wit of England the twenty- first and of France the eighth (year) of the time when the same king stood in the siege of the town of Calais." A second reason for the dropping of the pursuit may have been the rapid increase of the terrible scourge of the Black Death, which swept over England as well as the Continent, and disorganized many things.

It already has been noted that Robert de Dalton, after some months imprisonment in the Tower, was restored to freedom; and in the year following he received commission of Oyer and Terminer, together with several others (one of them Henry Haydok) to hear the complaint of Robert de Shirbourn that the Abbot of Cockersand and several others had assaulted him and his servants at Cockerham "whereby he lost the service of the latter for a great time." A fine of forty shillings was the penalty. On May 4, 1350 an interesting item relating to John appears:

"Pardon to John de Dalton, knight, for good service and because he has humbly submitted himself to the king's grace of the king's suit for the ravishment of Margery" etc. Good service in the wars, it has been remarked, was almost always a sufficient reason for overlooking any crime. Not only was John pardoned, but in June of this same year he received a grant "that he may the better maintain himself in the king's service and for his fee by reason of his stay with the king," of £50 annually.

Among the possessions of Robert de Dalton had been the "farm revenue of the town" of Apethorp in Northamptonshire, given him by charter, and worth £39. 19. 3d. yearly. At the Inquisition post mortem (which was always held after an owner's death), it is stated that John de Dalton, knight, his son, aged thirty years and more, is the heir. The Manor of Bispham has been valued at £22. 8. 4d. a year; and 40 acres in Dalton itself (the Manor) were held of Roger la Warr, Lord of Manchester, in socage, by the rent of 9d. yearly. Bispham was held of Sir William Ferrers by the rent of 3s 4d. Sir John also held lands in Whittington of the Lord de Coucy by knight's service, where the free tenants rendered 43s. 4d. and the tenants at will, for 60 acres, 40s. The Ferrers were one of the most noted families in England, allied to the Despencers, the Poynings, and the Greys, and the villages of Woodham Ferrers in Essex, near Chelmsford, still bear their name. John added to his possessions by receiving or perhaps only renewing, a grant for life of the Manor of Hackinsall, in 1357, and the same of Halewood, in 1367. There were there a house and garden, and 40 acres of land, held of Sir Robert de Holand in socage by 7s. yearly.

John was continuing his fighting career, for there is mention of safe-conducts granted to three men, one of whom, James Penquadyk, was a prisoner of Sir John de Dalton, in July 1359; and in December of the same year is a treaty between Robert Lord Fiennes, Constable of France, and Sir John de Dalton; and a capitulation of him and two others to the Lord of Fiennes, dated from Auxerre.

This next story is about **William de Dalton**, the second son of Robert de Dalton .

A 14th CENTURY ROYAL SERVANT: WILLIAM DALTON: by Michael Cayley.

The earliest Dalton for whom there are fairly full records is Sir Robert Dalton, who dominates the opening pages of Part I of Mrs. Leaning's Dalton Book. Sir Robert was closely associated with Thomas, Duke of Lancaster, whose efforts to separate Edward II from his favorites' led to his own downfall, and to Sir Robert's subsequent imprisonment in 1322. Sir Robert was subsequently released, and gained the favour of Edward III, becoming Keeper of the King's Woods at Blackburn Chase, and in 1343, Constable of the Tower of London.

Given Sir Robert's own enjoyment of royal favour, it is scarcely surprising that one of Sir Robert's sons was able to enjoy a successful career in what was to develop over the centuries into the civil service. The son was William Dalton, and the following account of his career is based mainly on information about him in a 1993 publication of the Yorkshire

Archaeological Society - Beverley Minster Fasti. (The publications of county archaeological societies often include transcripts and translations of documents and records of great value to genealogists, and the Yorkshire society has been particularly active in making such items available.) The Fasti were the official register of Beverley Minster, and William Dalton features in them because he held office there.

Like many medieval career officers of the crown and great lords, William was a clerk in holy orders. His official career took him to positions of considerable influence. By 1336 he was clerk of the Great Wardrobe. Probably he started in a lower - and probably more informal - role before that. He became Cofferer of the Great Wardrobe in 1338, and was Controller from 1344 to 1350. William appears to have been unaffected by the cloud which hung over his family following the abduction of Margery de la Bèche by Sir John de Dalton and others in 1345 whereas his father was briefly imprisoned, there seems to have been no interruption to William's career. Clearly there was no possibility that William was directly implicated, and he must have been high in royal favour. It is quite possible that William's intervention helped to shield the family from further punishment, although there is no direct evidence for this,

In 1351 - with, I assume, royal encouragement - William began three year s' study at Oxford, though he never took a degree. According to the Yorkshire Archaeological Society publication, he became Keeper of the Great Wardrobe in 1353, a position he held until 1358: but this conflicts with the list of Keepers in the Handbook of British Chronology (3rd edition published in 1986 by University College, London for the Royal Historical Society), which shows John Buckingham and William Retford successively occupying the post in these years. I am not sure which is right, but suspect the Handbook is more likely to be correct as its list is based on extensive earlier research. At the least, William was occupying one of the top posts in the Wardrobe. He is recorded as still being "king's clerk" in 1361, and he was clearly being rewarded by Edward III for

services after that .

What was the "Wardrobe"? As often with the royal household, the name bears little relation to the function. The Wardrobe was the administrative heart of the monarchy. The Keeper - its most senior officer - headed the royal treasury and secretariat - a sort of (in today's UK terms) super permanent secretary in the civil service. The Controller was the Keeper's Deputy, and the Cofferer was third in rank. These were posts of substantial power, and in the fourteenth century they were occupied by clerks in holy orders. (In the following century Keeper and Controller were generally knights or barons, though the Cofferer - who oversaw the clerical functions of the household - remained customarily an ecclesiastic.)

The main way a monarch rewarded a loyal servant in holy orders was through profitable ecclesiastical appointments, the duties of which would commonly have been performed by someone he either paid or allowed to keep some of the perquisites of the post. Plural livings were the norm for the higher officials. Accordingly we find William simultaneously occupying a number of ecclesiastical posts across the land. Some of these are likely to have been in his own father's gift. This is almost certainly true of one of the first livings for which there appear to be records: by 1339 he was rector of South Dalton. Before that, from 1337 to 1338, he was rector of the moiety of Eckington in the diocese of Chester and Lincoln. In 1341 he added to the South Dalton rectorate being rector of Brigham in Cumberland, and from then on ecclesiastical appointments multiplied. The easiest thing is just to list them:

- From 1342 until at least 1353, prebend of the Royal Free Chapel at Hastings.
 - From 1343 to 1367, prebend (member of the chapter) of Lincoln.
 - From 1345, rector of Houghton-le-Spring in the diocese of Durham.
 - By 1347, prebend of the Royal Free Chapel at Bridgnorth, Shropshire.
 - From 1347 to 1353 or 1354, sacrist at Beverley Minster (hence his name in the Minster Fasti): Adam de Heselwick became rector of South Dalton in that year, so probably the two of them arranged a swap. (The sacrist's official duties were to look after the vestments, relics and other treasures of a religious establishment. William would have arranged for one of the clerics or retainers at Beverley to undertake the doubtless often tedious real work of the office.)
 - From 1349 to 1358, prebend of St Andrew's, Auckland, in the diocese of Durham.
 - From 1363, canon at York and prebend of Knaresborough.
 - From 1367, prebend of Wimborne in the diocese of Salisbury.
- In addition, at some point he became vicar of Bulwell in Nottinghamshire. The number of these appointments is a confirmation of the importance of the role William Dalton filled. They would have brought him a comfortable

income, which would have been supplemented by other perquisites of office. William died in 1371, six years before the royal master to whose service he had devoted himself.

END

Another article on William Dalton: Copied from Vol. 17 No. 1 of the Journal of the Dalton Genealogical Society.

According to A B Emden in his Biographical Register of the University of Oxford, page 538, William de Dalton was Rector of Echington in Derbyshire in 1338 and Rector of Brigham in Cumberland in 1343.

Dr C Moor, Vicar of Gainsborough, found in an unpublished manuscript, 'Lincoln Cathedral Clery', William Dalton, obit. 1372.

A. B. Emden, again on page 538, there is a long biography of William. It calls William 'son of Robert Dalton knight'. William was appointed Rector of Ecklington in 1337, and resided at Oxford for purposes of study in 1351-53.

'William de Dalton was presented to the Rectory of Bulwell, in Nottinghamshire, on 25th November 1322 and to that of Croxton in Lincolnshire, on 30th March 1324. He was, granted the prebend of Bridgenorth and became Deputy Keeper of the Great Wardrobe. On 20th February 1335, he seized the King's goods, lately in the hands of Robert de Taunton, deceased. He was presented to a moiety in Skynton Church, Derbyshire on 20th July 1337 and became the Parson of South Dalton in Yorkshire. While serving with the King's army in France, he was captured by men of the King of Bohemia and taken to Germany, where he was detained for some time. His benefice was kept open for him, however, until he returned to England, on 3rd December 1339. After he returned he became the King's Clerk in the diocese of York, and took up the Benefice in the gift of St. Mary's Abbey, York, which had been granted to him on the 29th, of July 1333. He was presented to the Rectory of Brigham in Cumberland on 10th January 1341 and to the prebend of Brightling in Hastings, on 28th April 1342. He was said to be a son of Sir Robert Dalton, Knight. He was given a grant in Wingham, and the prebend of Farendon in Lincoln on 25th July 1343. He was presented to the Rectory of Houghton le Spring, in Durham, on 30th April 1347. He was also granted the prebend of Ketton and became Controller of the King's Household, on 31st August 1349. He was given a grant for his long service to the King and his household and the right to have the same wages and wear the same robes in perpetuity, as when he was the Controller on 20th January 1350. He was given a prebend in Aukland, on 6th June 1350, and a further prebend in Lincoln which he obtained on the death of Henry de Edenston.'

On 8th May 1350, it is recorded that at that time he held Houghton, the Sacristy of Beverly and prebends in Aukland, Bridgenorth and Hastings, so he must have been a very important man indeed, and he moved in the highest Court circles.

William de Dalton lent money to the Prince of Wales for play and was repaid E4. 13. 4d. on 15th May 1352. He was made Keeper of the Great Wardrobe on 25th June 1353, in 1355 various men owed him E160 and in 1358, E300. He was granted a further prebend in York on the death of Simon de Brise, and he was apparently an intimate friend of Baron Guy de Brien. on 24th January 1355, he was granted a further prebend in Hereford, on the death of Simon de Ledbury, and he became the Dean there. He exchanged the prebend of Carlton cum Dalby for the prebend of Ketton with William de Hilgate. He was charged by the King with the duty of delivering cloth for the Justices of the Bench and the Baron of Exeter in 1357. He was the King's Inspector of Shipping and he was given the task of enquiring into the wool trade in Norfolk and Suffolk. He went overseas again on these duties in 1358. When he returned, he exchanged his prebend in Aukland with William de Custantia for one in Ripon. He was collated to a prebend of Knaresborough in York on 2nd August 1363, and, in 1365, he sued in the Roman court to the damage of the King's Realm, and opposed the new taxation. He was confirmed in the prebends of Houghton, York and Ripon in 1367, and the se together were valued at 170m. He died on 8th March 1372, voiding his prebend in York to Cardinal St. Eustace.

The Kings whom William served were Edward II and Edward III, and the war was the 100 years war between England and France, during which the Flemish wool weavers were on the English side. The wool trade was an extremely important one at this time, as the wool was grown in England, but woven in the Low Lands, so the Keeper of the Great Wardrobe, with the task of looking after all imports of cloth, was an important position. William must have been not only a very rich priest, with all his prebends, but also a very influential man.

1 June 1336, Woodstock. Commission to Ralph de Middelneye, reciting the appointment of the king's clerks, John Cook of Exeter, Hugh de Eboraco and William de Dalton, to take into the king's hands and keep safely until further order the goods and chattels, both jewels and other things, late of Robert de Tanton, keeper of the wardrobe of the household, owing to the account which he was held to render on the day of his death of the time when he was keeper; and appointing Ralph to cause to be ground all the corn late growing in the lands of the temporalities of the provostship of Wells, late of the said Robert, provost of Wells, which the said Hugh has caused to be collected and put in the granges of Coumbes St Nicholas and Wynesham, in the counties of Somerset and Dorset; and to cause the same to be sold by view and testimony of good men of that place, so that he answer for the money arising there from; the king having ordered t he said John, Hugh and William to deliver the corn to him.

12 March 1350, Westminster. Grant to the king's clerk, William de Dalton, of the marriage of the son and heir of John de Cave of Beverley, deceased, who held by knight service of the heir of William de Ros, a minor in the king's ward, to hold the same as shall be agreed upon between him and the treasurer.

29 April 1350, Westminster. Grant to William de Dalton, king's clerk, for 20l. which he will pay in the wardrobe, of the wardship of the lands in Middleton, co. York, late of John de Cave of Middleton, who held by knight service of the heir of William de Roos of Hamelak, a minor in the king's ward, to hold the same, with the issues since John's death, until the lawful age of the heir, together with his marriage; and so from heir to heir.

6 June 1350, Westminster. Commitment to William de Dalton, king's clerk, of the wardship of the lands in Great Hoghton, Claphull and Caynho late of Brian Saffrey, who held by knight service of the heir of Laurence de Hastynges, late earl of Pembroke, a minor in the king's ward, to hold from Easter last until the full age of Brian's heir, together with the marriage of such heir, rendering 100s. yearly in the wardrobe for the wardship, by equal portions at Michaelmas and Easter, and paying 10l. the re. for the marriage. [Vacated because surrendered, and the said William did not meddle therein and nothing thereof was done.]

25 June 1353, Westminster. Appointment during pleasure of William de Dalton, king's clerk, as keeper of the king's great wardrobe, with the accustomed wages and fees.

Order to John de Thorp and Giles de Wyngreworth to deliver to him all cloths, wax, spices and other things pertaining to the office which are in the keeping after the death of Robert de Wyngreworth, late keeper.

Source: The "Calendar of Fine Rolls" Part I covers the period of 1300-1343 during the reigns of Edward II and Edward III of England. Vol. IV, Edward III, 1327-1337, pub. HMSO 1913

1 May 1357, Westminster. Order to the collectors of petty custom in the port of London, notwithstanding a previous order to appraise in the presence of William de Dalton, clerk of the great wardrobe, the 4 woollen cloths which were taken into the king's hand as forfeit because they were exposed for sale before being sealed with the king's seal for the custom and subsidy on such cloths, and to deliver them to William by indenture – to sell the said cloths, and all other like cloths which have been or may be arrested for the same cause, in the presence of the said William or his deputy, delivering to him the moneys forthcoming from such sale.

It seems very likely that some Rectors held the appointment in name only and never visited Houghton-le-Spring. For example, William Dalton I (Rector from 1347-1365) was a Prebendary of Hastings (Sussex), Bridgnorth (Shropshire), Lincoln and Auckland. He was a Canon and Sacrist at Beverley in Yorkshire and Canon at York and Ripon. He was also Controller of the King's Household. Whilst he would not necessarily hold all these offices simultaneously, there is no doubt that his multiplicity of positions would allow him little time to devote to the spiritual welfare of his Houghton parishioners.

8- Sir John II; was the son of John I was born about 1334 in Bispham and who bore arms as a Knight Bannaret. He married Isabel Pilkington. Isabel and Sir John were related within the fourth degree, and because they knew this when they married they were excommunicated. They separated and were given a license to remarry and a papal dispensation in 1391. The dispensation declared that their children would be legitimate.

Here is some real events in this Sir John de Dalton II life;

In 1385, Sir John's heir John, later a knight, was pardoned for marrying Isabel daughter of Roger de Pilkington without license of the Duke of Lancaster. He left two sons: the elder, Richard, married Katherine and their daughter & heir Alice married William Griffith in or before 1448. John's younger son Robert recovered some lands in Bispham but failed in a claim for the main manor. Robert's son Richard married Elizabeth daughter & coheir of William Fleming of Croston and was followed by his son Roger (who in 1492 made a feoffment of his lands) and grandson William I: a grant of 1500 to William gave the remainder to William's brother Richard.

8 Feb 1406, Westminster. Order to the escheator of the county of Northampton to take into the king's hand and keep safely all the lands in his bailiwick whereof John de Dalton 'chivalier', who held of the king in chief, was seized in her demesne on the day of his death; and to make inquisition touching his lands and heir.

6 Dec 1413, Westminster. Appointment during pleasure of John Dalton as receiver general of all lordships, manors and lands which pertain to the king's principality of Wales (the duchy of Cornwall with its members only excepted), answering to the Exchequer for the moneys of the said principality thus to be received by him, and taking in that office the customary fees, rewards and wages.

10 June 1414, Westminster. Order to the escheator in the county of Northampton to take into the king's hand and keep safely until further order all the lands in his bailiwick whereof Isabel late the wife of John de Dalton 'chivaler', who held of the king in chief, was seized in her demesne as of fee on the day of her death; and to make inquisition touching her lands and heir.

8 Feb 1438, Westminster. Order to the escheator in the county of Northampton; - pursuant to an inquisition taken before him showing that Jon Dalton 'chivaler' was seized in his demesne as of fee of 39l. 19s. of rent of Apthorp, and held that rent of Henry IV in chief; and that the said John being so seized of the said rent, a fine was levied in the king's court at Westminster, 3 Henry IV, before William Thirnyng, William Rykhill, John Markham, William Hankeford and William Brenchesle, justices, and others the said king's lieges, between Roger Thomlynson of Byspeham and William de Grenehirst, querents, and the said John Dalton and Isabel his wife, deforciant, touching the said rent, whereof a plea of covenant was summoned between them in the same court, to wit, that the said John acknowledged the said rent to be the right of the said Roger and William as that which the said Roger and William had of the gift of the said John, and for that acknowledgment, fine and concord the said Roger and William granted the said rent to the said John and Isabel and rendered it to them in the same court, to hold the same to the said John and Isabel for life, of the said late king and his heirs by the services due and customary, with remainder to Roger Dalton (now deceased), by name of Roger son of the said John and Isabel, for life, and remainder over to the heirs of the bodies of the said John and Isabel for ever; and that the said John and Isabel are dead; and that Richard Dalton is the son and next heir of the said John and Isabel, and of full age; - to cause the said Richard to have full seisin of the said rent, (which has been taken into the king's hand by the death of the said Roger), as the king has taken his fealty and for 20s. paid in the hanaper has respited his homage until Midsummer next. It is said that Sir John Dalton Jr. was of Knowsley. In other words he was probably not born there but may have been an owner of some land there. His grandfather was married to Mary de Latham, whose family once owned the Manor of Knowsley.

Joan daughter of Hugh Venables married Sir Thomas de Lathom who inherited the family lands in 1370 and died in early 1382. They had a son Thomas who died in 1383, leaving a widow Isabel who subsequently married Sir John de Dalton. Isabel and Sir John were related within the fourth degree, and because they knew this when they married they were excommunicated. They separated and were given a licence to remarry and a papal dispensation in 1391. The dispensation declared that their children would be legitimate.

1385 - Sir John's heir John, later a knight, was pardoned for marrying Isabel daughter of Roger de Pilkington without license of the Duke of Lancaster. He left two sons: the elder, Richard, married Katherine and their daughter & heir Alice married William Griffith in or before 1448. John's younger son Robert recovered some lands in Bispham but failed in a claim for the main manor. Robert's son Richard married Elizabeth daughter & co-heir of William Fleming of Croston and was followed by his son Roger (who in 1492 made a feoffment of his lands) and grandson William I: a grant of 1500 to William gave the remainder to William's brother Richard.

Source: Calendar of the Fine Rolls, Henry IV, 1405-1413, pub HMSO 1933:

8 Feb 1406, Westminster. Order to the escheator of the county of Northampton to take into the king's hand and keep safely all the lands in his bailiwick whereof John de Dalton 'chivalier', who held of the king in chief, was seized in her demesne on the day of his death; and to make inquisition touching his lands and heir.

Source: Calendar of the Fine Rolls, Henry V, 1413-1422, pub. HMSO 1934.

6 Dec 1413, Westminster. Appointment during pleasure of John Dalton as receiver general of all lordships, manors and lands which pertain to the king's principality of Wales (the duchy of Cornwall with its members only excepted), answering to the Exchequer for the moneys of the said principality thus to be received by him, and taking in that office the customary fees, rewards and wages.

10 June 1414, Westminster. Order to the escheator in the county of Northampton to take into the king's hand and keep safely until further order all the lands in his bailiwick whereof Isabel late the wife of John de Dalt on 'chivaler', who held of the king in chief, was seized in her demesne as of fee on the day of her death; and to make inquisition touching her lands and heir.

26 Nov 1417, Westminster. John Dalton and Richard Lyversegge stood mainprise for Nicholas Sutton in relation to a cottage in Esthattele which had been seized by the king following the outlawry of Simon Bone, chaplain.

Source: Calendar of the Fine Rolls, Henry VI, 1437-1445, pub HMSO 1937.

8 Feb 1438, Westminster. Order to the escheator in the county of Northampton; - pursuant to an inquisition taken before him showing that Jon Dalton 'chivaler' was seized in his demesne as of fee of 39l. 19s. of rent of Apthorp, and held that rent of Henry IV in chief; and that the said John being so seized of the said rent, a fine was levied in thye king's court at Westminster, 3 Henry IV, before William Thirnyng, William Rykhill, John Mar kham, William Hankeford and William Brenchesle, justices, and others the said king's lieges, between Roger Thomlynson of Byspeham and William de Grenehirst, querents, and the said John Dalton and Isabel his wife, deforciant, touching the said rent, whereof a plea of covenant was summoned between them in the same court, to wit, that the said John acknowledged the said rent to be the right of the said Roger and William as that which the said Roger and William had of the gift of the said John, and for that acknowledgement, fine and concord the said Roger and William granted the said rent to the said John and Isabel and rendered it to them in the same court, to hold the same to the said John and Isabel for life, of the said late king and his heirs by the services due and customary, with remainder to Roger Dalton (now

deceased), by name of Roger son of the said John and Isabel, for life, and remainder over to the heirs of the bodies of the said John and Isabel for ever; and that the said John and Isabel are dead; and that Richard Dalton is the son and next heir of the said John and Isabel, and of full age; - to cause the said Richard to have full seisin of the said rent, (which has been taken into the king's hand by the death of the said Roger), as the king has taken his fealty and for 20s. paid in the hanaper has respited his homage until Midsummer next.

Knowsley Estate Origins and History:

It is said that Sir John Dalton Jr. was of Knowsley. In other words he was probably not born there but may have been an owner of some land there. His grandfather was married to Mary de Latham, whose family once owned the Manor of Knowsley.

Knowsley was held by the Lathom family since the twelfth century. In 1385, with the marriage of Isabel de Lathom to Sir John de Stanley the lands passed to the Stanley family who still hold it today. Sir John Stanley was made Lord Deputy of Ireland by Richard II and went on to hold a number of distinguished positions including Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, Treasurer of the Royal Household and Lord of the Isle of Man. His grandson Thomas also became Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and in 1456 was summoned to Parliament as Lord Stanley. The second Lord Stanley (another Thomas) was knighted in 1460 and was created the First Earl of Derby by a grateful King Henry VII after his intervention proved decisive in the Battle of Bosworth in 1485. Although Lathom House, near Ormskirk, was the chief seat of the family (until its destruction in the Civil War), the first Earl must have kept a great house at Knowsley. He built the 'Royal Lodging' in 1495 in honour of Henry VII's visit. In the late sixteenth century it had 118 servants including two trumpeters and a Fool named Henry. By the mid 17th century, the Hall was a huddle of buildings of various dates, materials and uses that ran along the north-south line of the site of the present building. Beyond the Royal Lodging were the kitchens and various court offices, to the east was the chapel with the stables to the north.

In the pleas held at Lancaster Castle before the King's justices on August 29th, 1401, Sir John de Dalton was summoned to answer Robert de Urswyk on a plea that he pay over 100 pounds, which was under a bond dated at Rawcliffe in 1384, to have been paid in Preston in 1385. When the bond was produced in court John refused to acknowledge the writing his and put himself in patria and Urswyk did the same. Dalton then protested that John Botiller of Rawcliffe, the sheriff and John Laurence and William de Pemberton, two of the king's coroners, were kinsmen of the plaintiff and demanded that they should not meddle with the arraying of the panel but that it be committed to the third coroner. The case is resumed in the following February when Dalton's attorney produced royal letters of protection inhibiting his lands and rents from molestation seeing that he was staying

in the retinue of Henry Percy warden of Berwick-on-Tweed in the King's obedience. it was finally granted that the suit remain sine die.

Source: Copied from the book; "Knights of the Shire of the County Palatine of Lancaster"

In the pleas held at Lancaster Castle before the King's justices on August 29th, 1401, Sir John de Dalton was summoned to answer Robert de Urswyk on a plea that he pay over 100 pounds, which was under a bond dated at Rawcliffe in 1384, to have been paid in Preston in 1385. When the bond was produced in court John refused to acknowledge the writing his and put himself in patria and Urswyk did the same.

Dalton then protested that John Botiller of Rawcliffe, the sheriff and John Laurence and William de Pemberton, two of the king's coroners, were kinsmen of the plaintiff and demanded that they should not meddle with the arraying of the panel but that it be committed to the third coroner. The case is resumed in the following February when Dalton's attorney produced royal letters of protection inhibiting his lands and rents from molestation seeing that he was staying in the retinue of Henry Percy warden of Berwick-on-Tweed in the King's obedience. It was finally granted that the suit remain sine die.

9- Sir Robert Dalton; was the second son of Sir John Dalton II was born about 1386 in Byspham, Lancashire Co. England, married Margaret Holker and they had three sons:

1. Richard, the heir.
2. William, married Elizabeth Beaconsall of Lancashire and lived to old age, having a son Richard, who became a priest, and a daughter, Anne, married Seth Worsley of Croston; there were several other sisters.
3. John, of Kingston-Upon-Hull, Yorkshire. He of the Yorkshire branch of our Dalton's.

Margaret Holker was probably from the family that Holker Hall is named after. There is an Upper & Lower Holker township in Cartmel Parish in Lancashire.

Sixty-one years after the Norman Conquest, the religious establishment at Tulketh Castle was moved to Dalton and took the name of the district, Furness Abbey. (Not our Dalton's village)

The estate of Holker originally belonged to the Cartmel Priory and Furness Abbey. There is Holker Hall still in use today about 10 miles North of the ruins of Furness Abbey. During the Dissolution of the Monasteries the land was granted to the Preston family of Lancashire.

What has been found about Robert Dalton of Byspham is the following:

Robert Dalton was called upon, with others, to furnish his share of the fighting forces continually needed in France. In May of 1425, the Patent Rolls have the following entry:

"Commission to Ralph Boteler, Knight and three others, one being John Pykering, to take at Calais, the musters of the following captains and of the men at arms and archers about to proceed to France in their companies and to certify the council as to the sufficiency of their array"

John Holand, Knight, 24 men at arms and 72 archers.

Gyoffrey de Wryghtyngton, Esquire, 6 men at arms and 18 archers.

Roger Fyenes, Knight, 30 men at arms and 90 archers.

Robert Dalton, Esquire, 10 men at arms and 30 archers.

Richard Banastre and Thomas Scarsbrok, Esquire, 10 men at arms and 30 archers.

Gilbert Banastre, 3 men at arms and 9 archers.

There are numerous others, but these names show us a group of knights and esquires travelling together, who were neighbors at home.

Now as you have read in the above Patent Rolls entry, our Robert Dalton is named as an esquire, not as a Knight. We have no other proof that he was a Knight like his son after him or his father before.

The next event we find with a date comes after the death of Robert's eldest brother (Rychard), when he sued Katherine, his widowed sister-in-law, concerning a house, garden and forty acres of land in the Manor of Halewood. This was in 1443. In 1472, 29 years later, he and his eldest son leased this land to Robert Lathom of Allerton for 39 years, at a rent of 40s. Who the "Margaret" was whom Robert married I have no evidence for, but he had three sons. The second son, William, married and lived to old age, having a son Richard, who became a priest and a daughter, Anne, who married Seth Worsley of Croston. She had several sisters; but the third son, John, is not in evidence as having married. The line therefore continues with Robert's eldest son, Richard Dalton of Croston, and of so much of Bispham as he inherited at this father's death, for according to a statement in VCHL. "It was not the whole manor but various lands in Byspham that now remained"

From the VICTORIA COUNTY HISTORIES of LANCASHIRE: Vol. 3 page 151.

In 1472 Robert Dalton of Bispham and his son & heir apparent Richard leased their Halewood lands to Robert Lathom of Allerton for 39 years at a rent of 40s.

So then Richard, son of Sir Robert become heir to the Dalton lands and who continued our Dalton line.



The little village of Bispham in Lancashire, England

John Dalton, of Kingston-Upon-Hull, Yorkshire. He of the Yorkshire branch of our Dalton's. He was a son of Robert Dalton.

The following is a document stored in the Public Records Office, Kew England. Under the title: Court of Chancery: Six Clerks Office. Early proceedings, Richard II to Phillip and Mary.

"John Dalton, of Kingston upon Hull, son of Robert Dalton. v. Thomas Cooke and William Morcell, executors of the said Robert.: Detention of deeds relating to messuages and gardens in Beverley, York".

The family of DALTON is proved by Dugdale's Visitation (1666) to have been settled at Kingston-upon-Hull many years prior to going into Richmondshire.

The Yorkshire Dalton family were well established in Kingston-upon-Hull by the middle of the fifteenth century.

The family were merchants of the staple (the staplers traded in wool and had their chief office at Calais) and must have been both prominent and prosperous, for, as early as

1487, John Dalton was elected Mayor. The city had been founded in the reign of Edward I and the first mayor was appointed in 1332.

All through the sixteenth century the family kept on producing the Chief Citizen; several of them serving twice or thrice over a period of years, of ten holding the office of Sheriff before being elected Mayor. One of the m, Thomas, an Alderman and Merchant, was also very holy. By his will dated 1497 (the year Cabot sailed to Newfoundland and Labrador) Mae founded a Chantry in Holy Trinity Church. He also left his house near the Church to the table-priests and their successors, and gave them his "great picture of beyond sea work which cost him 8 pounds sterling to set up over t he Altar of St. Corpus Christi in the Church." And he asked to be buried on the north side of the aisle.

The family's activities as Mayor, however, were not always plain sailing. In 1540, King Henry VIII visited Hull on his way to meet his nephew, James V of Scotland, at York, and, after being suitably entertained, he left for that city. Meanwhile, the election for Mayor was due, and the candidates were Mr. Dalton and Mr. Johnson. Alas! before the votes were cast, the King unexpectedly returned; the election was postponed and the candidates went to meet him. When he heard about the election, Henry ordered the Corporation to meet again and mentioned that Sir John Eland should be nominated along with the other two. At the election, the King voted for Sir John, and of course the latter was elected. I suspect that democracy was but skin-deep in those days, and in any case it was discreet not to thwart a Tudor monarch.

Another Dalton, Thomas, during the first of his three mayoralties, was in office in 1554 when a rich citizen called Sir William Knowles presented the Corporation with a gold chain weighing 41/2 ounces upon condition that the Mayor should wear it every Sunday, holiday, and on particular occasions or else forfeit 40 pence for every omission. This story has a sequel. The chain, presumably first worn by Thomas Dalton in 1554, is still the basis of the chain worn by contemporary Lord Mayors of Hull, and was worn when the writer, 10th in descent from Thomas, during his y ear as High Sheriff of Yorkshire, entertained the Lord Mayor of Hull to luncheon at the Assizes.

The last Dalton to be Mayor, in 1588, was Robert, and I am sorry to say he brought discredit on this family. He was accused later of having "en grossed most of the mills in his hands, taking (instead of money) moultcorn, and more of it than he should, and aggravated his offence by mixing plaster with it to increase the weight." For this grave offence he was severely reprehended" and might well have been fined too had he not apologized and promised never to repeat the crime. Honesty compels me to record this blot; family pride makes me add that the culprit was not a direct ancestor of the present Dalton line:

By the end of the sixteenth century, the family was ready to expand its life away from the channels of commerce. For some time they had married in to the families of the landed gentry, and had been well educated. In particular, William Dalton, second son of that Thomas who had three times been Mayor, became a lawyer and was Recorder of Hull. He then moved and settled at or near Otley in the 'West Riding of Yorkshire. He was made a member of the Council of the North at York, was subsequently (in the language of the period) Attorney-General of the Northern Court- which probably meant secretary to the Council in modern terms - and became also Recorder of York. His office was at The King's Manor in York, which is still in existence and is now part of York University. He was knighted by King Charles I at Whitehall Palace in 1629. A few years later we find his signature on a letter from the Council to the Mayor and Aldermen of Hull about the fortifications of the town and the payment for them: I hope it gave him satisfaction to take some part in the affairs of his native place. It is not known when he was born, but he died in 1649, a staunch but doubtless saddened Royalist, and was buried in York Minster. There is a portrait of him, as an old man, at Hauxwell Hall. It was in 1631 that he had bought Hauxwell for his son John, of whom more in a moment

Before finally leaving Hull, it may be of interest to quote from an eighteenth century history of the town concerning the duties of Mayor in the earliest days, to show that the holders of that office were persons of consequence and had heavy responsibilities.

"During his year of office he is to see the laws executed, and the King within his district exercises his authority by the Mayor's administration, so that he is the King's Lieutenant in his absence. The Mayor of Hull gives place and drops the insignia of authority only to the Sovereign himself or the presumptive Heir to the Crown, in the presence of whom only he is dispossessed and on such occasions carries himself the mace before the King."

HAUXWELL or HAWKSWELL:

The manors of East and West Hauxwell and of Barden in Yorkshire belonged after the Conquest to Earl Alan of Richmond and his brother. They descended through various families over the years and early in the seventeenth century were possessed by the Jopsons. From this family they were acquired in 1631 by Sir William Dalton for his son John, who thus became "First of Hauxwell" for our family. John had married Dorothy D'Arcy of Horn by Castle near Bedale and only three miles from Hauxwell. The house at this date was small and simple and John was perhaps some sort of agent for the D'Arcys. He was certainly "of their party" politically and shortly became second-in-command of his brother-in-law's troop of Royalist horse. (Several pieces of armor of the period are still to be seen in the museum at Hauxwell). The family's Hull origins were kept in mind by the inclusion in a window of Hauxwell Church of an heraldic shield of sixteenth

century painted glass depicting Dalton impaling Tyrwhitt. Ann Tyrwhitt had been the second wife of Thomas Dalton of Hull and was John Dalton's grandmother.

Whatever plans John, with his wife Dorothy, may have had as squire of Hauxwell, were shattered by the Civil War. John took service with his brother-in-law D'Arcy, and in 1643 they were assigned the duty of escorting the Queen, Henrietta Maria, on her journey across England. The Queen had landed at Bridlington on the Yorkshire coast in February, and after a delay in York began the hazardous cross-country journey to join the King at Oxford. She arrived there in July, but regrettably John Dalton was no longer with her. At the crossing of the River Trent at Burton, there was a skirmish with the Parliamentary troops; John was badly wounded. He was taken back to Yorkshire where he died a year later and was buried in York Minster. This melancholy event was recorded by his father, Sir William, in his own handwriting on one of the fly-leaves of his law manual.

"My only sonne John Dalton was wounded at Burton upon Trent the fifth of July 1643 and thereof dyed 1644 the 24 of July who was a valiant man and a duetyfull and lovinge sonne." Would not any of us be satisfied with such a simple and moving epitaph?

One can imagine the disruption and distress caused by the Civil War, with allegiance divided even within families. Yet things soon returned to normal, and after his restoration, Charles II, now King, remembered those whose families had loyally supported his parents. John's son William was one of those knighted by Charles II. This second Sir William lived at Hauxwell and before he died had begun to enlarge the house. So far as is known, no celebrated architect was employed, but the work attributed to this period is typically restrained and eminently suitable for a squire's house.

The Daltons continued in the male line all through the 18th century when their most important member was Sir Charles, younger son of the second Sir William. He had been born in 1660 and in middle life obtained some minor appointment as an Usher at the Court in London. Here he mixed with fashionable and cosmopolitan people and acquired knowledge (and possessions) which were to influence Hauxwell permanently. It was in 1717 that he became the owner of the property, succeeding a niece who was unmarried and who had got into financial difficulties. Having "bailed her out", he took over the property and commemorated the event by erecting a stone obelisk in front of his house. This monument stood sturdily for nearly 250 years before being severely damaged in the great gale which ravaged this part of Yorkshire in 1962. It has since been repaired.

Sir Charles never married. In 1727 he became Gentleman Usher of the Black Rod, a position of some consequence in those days, which he held till his death twenty years later. During this time he built a wing to the house, the ground floor being a beautifully

proportioned room decorated with carved wood panels and plaster work, and imported some notable pieces of Flemish tapestry which family tradition believes he "acquired" from the palace of Westminster: He also collected books, many of which have survived, as has also his court dress sword and a part of his black rod.

After Sir Charles's death in 1747 the property passed through a somewhat twilight period. For more than forty years his parson nephew, another Charles, was in possession and must have planted trees near the house where some very fine hard-wood specimens still stand. He in his turn was succeeded for a short time by his brother Francis. This brother had married a lady who was related to the Bathurst family and who inherited some family portraits as well as a house in Kent. This house was sold and the proceeds used to enlarge the Hauxwell estate. Francis and his wife had an only daughter who married into a distinguished local family called Gale and lived to be 55 years old. Her grand-daughter, who inherited Hauxwell, took the additional name of Dalton to her married name of Wade. After three generations of Wade-Daltons, the last of that line, being childless, gave the estate to his distant kinsman, Richard Dalton, born 1948, whose direct ancestor had bought it over 300 years previously.

10- Sir Richard Dalton; was the third son of Sir Robert Dalton of Croston, was born in 1445 and died in 1486. He married Elizabeth Fleming a daughter of Sir William Fleming of Wath, Yorkshire.

Richard and Elizabeth had 2 children:

- 1-Ellen Dalton, Lady of the Garter, born about 1465
- 2-Sir Roger Dalton, born about 1469.

Elizabeth Fleming is probably descending from the Michael le Fleming II family that were the first holders of the moiety of Furness and was Lord of Aldingham in Furness, 1127, and Lord of Urswick. He held Bolton manor, 1127, which he gave to his daughter Godith, whose descendants in the Copeland family inherited it. Furthermore he held the manors of Bechermet, Frissington, Waddington, Rottingham, Waddicker, and Arlocdon. But his main property consisted of the manors of Aldingham and Urswick.

The line continues with Robert's eldest son, Richard Dalton of Croston, and of so much of Byspham as he inherited at this father's death, for according to a statement in VCHL VI, p. 101, note 10, it was not the whole manor but various lands in Byspham that now remained.

Croston parish is in Leyland Hundred, and lies about 10 miles north of Byspham Hall, as the crow flies. A family named Fleming had been settled there since 1292 and earlier, and there was also a branch at Wath, in Yorkshire. The Dictionary of National Biography shows a Richard Fleming, in this century, as Bishop of Lincoln and founder of Lincoln

College, Oxford. He died in 1430, and was buried in Lincoln Cathedral. Sir William Fleming of Wath died in 1470, leaving one daughter married to Thomas Hesketh, and another Elizabeth, married to Richard Dalton of Croston and Byspham. In Croston Church is a low four-light window, the moulding over which terminates in carved heads, and it is over an arched doorway. Level with the sill of this window are shields; the first of Ashton quartering Lea; the third Hesketh quartering Banastre; and in the middle Dalton quartering Fleming. In heraldic language this is: "Azure crusiuy a lion rampant, guardant argent", which we recognize as our own arms, and "Barry of six argent and azure, in chief three lozenges gules" which are the arms of Fleming both here and in Lincoln Cathedral proving it to be the same family.

The Manor of Croston was held between Hesketh and Dalton in 1472. Ten years later old Robert Dalton (uncle to Robert and great-uncle to Richard) was claiming "a moiety of the Manor of Croston, with twenty messuages, etc. in Bispham, Mawdesley and Dalton, against Margaret Dalton, widow (his niece by marriage) and Richard Dalton, Esquire, and Elizabeth his wife". Before this, Richard and Elizabeth had conceded to her brother John an annuity of 46. 8d. Charged on lands in Croston and Mawdesley and in 1478 leased to Thomas Hesketh and his wife, all their interest in the lands of William Fleming. There was not only the family tie, but good family feeling in evidence, for in the 1489 Disputes between Thomas Hesketh and Richard and John Dalton were referred to arbitration.

The next event with a date comes after the death of Robert's eldest brother (Rychard), when he sued Katherine (his widowed sister-in-law) concerning a house, garden and forty acres of land in the Manor of Halewood. This was in 1443. In 1472, 29 year later, he and his eldest son leased this land to Robert Lathom of Allerton for 39 years, at a rent of 40s.

True facts for Sir Richard Dalton:

For £200: Ralph Standish of Standysh, esq., to Thomas Heskyth, esq., -- arbitration of Thomas, Earl of Derby, John Kyngesmill, Justice of Common Pleas, & Humfrey Conyngesby, Sergeant at Law, between Thomas Hesketh & William Wall, clerk, Richard Dalton, esq., & Roger his son by Elizabeth daughter of William Flemmyng, esq, concerning properties in Croston & Mawdesley.

Lease for life: Richard, son and heir of Robert Dalton, esq. to Margaret his mother -- properties in Maudesley in the tenure of Thomas Assheton: a close called the Yate Filde in the tenure of John Haresnape; another parcel of land called the Crabthorne Yorde in the tenure of Henry Wawan -- remainder to John his brother. Witn: James Scaresbrik, esq., Thomas Bradshagh, of Litherland, Thomas Maudesley and others. Given at Maudesley Mon. after St. Katherine Virgin, 21 Ed. IV.

Lease for 22 years at rent of red rose: Margaret widow of Robert Dalton, esq. and Richard his son and heir, to John Haliwall and Geoffrey Wallhill -- a close called the Hillfild in Heskyn, late in tenure of Richard Johnson and Robert Haliwall, lying between the Marehay and the Egthenacre -- Witn. Master Thomas Maudesley, perpetual vicar of Croston, James Halsall, Robert Standissh. Given at Heskyn.

And so it seems that the life of this Sir Richard was normal, if you call the following way of life in the medieval era.

Life amongst our Dalton family in the medieval period in England:

Did you ever wonder what life was like for our Dalton ancestors in medieval England? I read a book i got from my local library recently and it was about this very question.

There was a time when our Dalton's were great land owners and Sir Richard de Dalton I was just back from the Holy Land. He had started a family and being a Knight he had a great deal of responsibility not only to his Lord but to his servants and tenants. This was called a fiefdom, or fief. The so-called dark ages was over and there were small villages and towns with farmers and merchants around a walled area for protection. I have already told you about what it was like to be a Knight, so how did he and his fellow neighbors live.

In medieval feudalism the overlord was, in theory, socially, economically and politically supreme. He granted some part of his rights to his vassals, his noble companions and servants. The granted rights took the form of rule over a unit of land, or a fief. An implicit bargain was struck: the lord offered maintenance and protection; the vassal promised military service to his lord.

The land was called a manorial system, which determined the relations between the vassal, sub-vassal, tenants on the lord's manor. Now we know in our Dalton family there was a long succession of Knights and they were large landholders in the village of Dalton and Bispham and then in Thurnham Hall in Lancashire. Luckily for them they were in a class way above the masses, or peasants.

In feudal society gentlemen and ladies formed a kind of club, the members recognizable by dress and speech. Nobles played the game of menial service to their king, supervising his hunting, his dogs and wardrobe. Remember that there were a few Dalton's that worked for a King's of the time. Their life was precarious and had to be lived fast and hard. They had to put up with, polluted water, tainted foods, the rheumatic, pneumonia damp of stone-walled rooms, mistreatment of wounds, epidemics of typhoid, dysentery, smallpoxes, influenza and the plague took a heavy toll.

The proper medieval gentleman had many virtues. He was generally loyal to his feudal obligations and in the administration of justice. He was generous, particularly in bequeathing land and money to his church. He was sincerely religious, respectful of church authority and faithful to his duties. He took his knightly vows seriously and seldom violated an oath or solemn promise.

The center of the nobles life was his manor's hall or his lord's castle hall. Here he held court, transacted affairs, entertained, and dined on trestle tables set up for each meal. When he had private business, he took visitors into the bedroom. In winter the hall was very cold. In early times, a fire was built in the center of the hall, being of stone there was no danger of a fire, except when the sparks set fire to the straw that was spread about. The smoke found its way out through a small opening in the roof. Later on in the fourteenth century there were wall fireplaces and chimneys. It was said that if there was a "chamber with a chimney" the rich man would dine in comfort. The favored gentry by the fire were nice and warm while the underlings in far corners froze. People simply endured cold without complaint. Lack of warmth was aggravated by lack of light. Windows were small and high. With the early winter dark one had to light the torches, which were smoky and foul smelling, injurious to tapestries and decorations, and dangerous with their spurting sparks. Later there were crude lamps consisting of a wick of precious cotton floating in a bowl of vegetable or fish oil. They gave little light and much smell. Medieval man had to live by daylight. Winter in the north where our Daltons lived, was a time for food, song and storytelling. It was also a time of hardship, perpetual chill, scanty, monotonous, vitamin less food. To give some semblance of warmth, the great hall and bedrooms were often hung with tapestries representing biblical or hunting scenes. The floor was strewn with rushes or straw and could become unnecessarily foul in winter. Although most of the manors occupants slept on the floor on straw pallets, the lord and lady had a wood-framed bed, corded with rope, with curtains for privacy. On retiring, men and women stripped, hung their cloths on a pole to protect them from dirt, dogs, mice and donned at most a nightcap. In the winter time a good warm fur blanket was used as a cover.

A hard problem was the cleaning of cloths, for the world was a dirty place. The medieval housewife removed dirt and stains by rubbing the material in fuller's earth moistened by lye or by soaking in warm wine for two days. She fought vermin constantly by day and night. Contrary to popular legend, medieval people loved baths. They bathed wherever water was available. In streams or during rainstorms, but with a lookout for peepers. In the home it was always in the kitchen where as a large tin tub was used with all the family bathing one after another. Naturally the gentleman of the house was first with his wife and then children next. A servant was heating water on the fire to refreshen the bath.

Shaving was difficult, painful and infrequent and razor's looked like carving knives were likely to be old and dull. Even haircutting was disagreeable. Scissors were of a squeeze type and pulled mightily. Toothbrushes didn't come into being until the fourteenth century and then they didn't have them rubbed them with a green hazel twig and wiped with a woolen cloth.

The question is where did the people go? Privies were set in the manor or castle walls, where the waste dropped into a stream or moat, contaminate ground and the water. Later there were outhouses used. Since there was no toilet paper, use your imagination on how they wiped themselves.

No one in the Manor house or castle knew the time. The ringing of the church bell at various times of day was good enough for most people. Time was measured between sunrise and sunset. Sometime during the Fourteenth century the mechanical clock became good enough to be used in the form of a gigantic town clocks.

The gentleman's day began at dawn with morning mass, then breakfast which was substantial. The great event of the day was dinner, served at about ten A. M. after the lord's business was transacted. The people filed in, overnight guests, family, favored neighbors and others. A washbowl was brought in to be used by family and honored guests; everyone else washed his hands at a lavatory and dried them on a long towel. The people were served in order of precedence – visiting clergy, visiting Knight's and the lord's family. They took their seats on a long banquet table at the wall side of the high table, with the rest at other tables set “below the salt” perpendicular to the high table. Each pair of guests shared a wooden bowl. The cups on the tables were made of pewter, wood or horn. Guests were supplied with spoons, but these were just recently introduced, and the guests had to use their own knives. Dinner was always begun with a blessing. The food was carried across an open court from the kitchen, and was never more than lukewarm. The servants approached from the unoccupied side of the high table. There was almost always a tender roast on its spit with a young gentleman carver. But most of the food was minced or pounded flat. The servants ladled thick stews onto chunks of bread in the bowls. The man of the pair which was almost always a lady plucked out toothsome morsels with his fingers and offered them to his companion sitting next to him with much gallant byplay. The two took wine from the same goblet unless there was some bad feeling between the two. At the end of a long dinner the bread was collected for the poor. Bones and other discards were tossed to the begging dogs. The guests were again required to wash their hands before going off to hunt, play vigorous games or to take a long nap.

Medieval food implied a class distinction. The nobleman ate meat and white bread and drank wine. The others had porridge, turnips, dark bread, and in the north, beer and ale.

Meat and fowl were in great variety. All sorts of birds were eaten, from starlings to gulls, herons, storks, cormorants and vultures. Animals were cut up and cooked as soon as possible, or salted and smoked until needed. Tender fowls and animals were always cooked on a spit, but most meats were boiled since rangy cattle, stags and wild chickens were sure to be tough. Most dishes were served in which the taste of a dozen strong spices dominated, especially pepper, mustard and garlic. During Lent fish was substituted. Every kind of fish was eaten; dogfish, porpoises, seals, and whales were imported from the sea. The peasants ate the local fish caught from the streams and rivers nearby.

Most of the vegetables, except potatoes, tomatoes and corn were known, but they were scorned as commoners' food. There were many fruits eaten. Sugar sweets were a rarity because the sugar had to be imported and only the very well to do nobles had them.

After the sun went down there was a light serving of food, afterwards the guests might assemble to watch a floor show, presented by traveling minstrels, jugglers, acrobats and sometimes trained dogs and monkeys. A good storyteller was always present to end the night.

The greatest of nobles sport or entrainment was hunting and hawking. Deer and birds were the prize. Hunting laws bore cruelly on the commoner and peasants. Many were put to death if caught poaching.

Hawking was the nobles particular joy. His falconers were expert in the care, feeding and training of his birds. Knight's and ladies carried their favorite, hooded, on the wrist and parked it behind them at meals.

The manorial system, widespread in England was not at first favorable to the development of agriculture and commerce. Manors tended to be self-sufficient. The people lived in their small world, in constant fear of the strange world beyond. There seemed to be constant little wars going on around them, which sometimes killed them or at least burned their houses, and crops and killed their animals. The best they could for was to endure, and they endured. The Dalton family at least have the benefit to have knight's and knight's as neighbors.

In the eleventh and following centuries things took a turn for the better. Life became more stable; population increased; new lands were brought under cultivation and old lands rendered more productive. The quality of herds was improved by selection and crossbreeding. Flowing water was put to work, operating gristmills and providing power for forges. Windmills whiled on plains and uplands. Wasteland, forest, scrub and march were subdued by the plow. Trade revived, though it never entirely disappeared, even in the darkest days.

A new class appeared on the edge of feudal society: the merchants. Probably they originated among the landless men, escaped serfs, casual harvest laborers, beggars and outlaws. The merchants made the towns. They needed walls and wall builders, warehouses and guards, artisans to manufacture their trade goods, casket makers, cart builders, smiths, shipwrights and sailors, soldiers and muleteers. They needed farmers and herdsmen outside the walls to feed them; and bakers, brewers and butchers within. The merchants dealt in anything that might turn a profit.

As transportation became cheaper and more efficient, foods and goods began to travel. England exported fish, cheese and ale, and they imported dried figs, dates, raisins, olive oil, almonds and fruits, such as oranges and lemons. The wine business was colossal. England imported from Bordeaux great quantities of wine. The greatest international commerce was in textiles. The wool that was most prized came from England. Much of it went to Flanders for processing and then back to be bought by all. We all know our Dalton family was into sheep raising and wool merchandising. In general the overland trade routes followed the old Roman roads, whose stone pavements still served the traveler here and there. But with these few exceptions, the roads were in deplorable state. In wet weather the highways and roads became muddy rivulets, or even rivers. There were few bridges so one was often obliged to ford a dangerous stream. Once off the highway the traveler was in real trouble. There were no signposts, since the peasants didn't need them. On the main highways the traffic was very heavy, and with the road being not very wide it was always crowded. Everyone was on the roads: monks and nuns, bishops bound for Rome or making a visitation to some town; wandering students; singing pilgrims, papal postmen; King's postmen and soldiers; minstrels, quacks and drug sellers; chapmen and tinkers; seasonal workers and serfs out on bond; discharged soldiers, beggars and highwaymen; sheep and cattle on their way to market, befouling the already highway. The gentry and the well to do traveled on horseback and in caravans with their large attachment of servants; sometimes the King himself with hundreds of his court and guards clearing the way and doing a lot to disrupt the traveler. Everyone else went by afoot, bespattered by mounted men and scuffling through horse and mule dropping. Merchants traveled in caravans or convoy for protection from the highwaymen. They led a long train of pack animals, which were tended by hostlers and muleteers; it took about seventy beasts to carry the contents of a ten-ton truck. On the highway all movement ceased at sunset. Gentlemen would seek out a castle nearby, where they were fed and entertained. Commoners found inns, notorious for their crowding, discomfort and dreadful food and vermin. The poor were sheltered in the guest houses of monasteries; the poorest – outcasts and outlaws – sleep under the stars or the rain.

The merchants' usual destination was a trade fair that was granted by the King. This then was how many new cities started.

Modern writers distinguish between the feudal system and the manorial system, not always lucidly, for the two coincide as often as they diverge. As we have seen, the feudal system properly refers to the relations between fief holders and their lords. Essential to it was the noble lord's possession of a fiefdom or fief, a grant from a greater lord. The fief normally took the physical form of a manor: a castle or great house and a village surrounded by farmlands. Our Dalton family was granted fiefs from these greater lords.

The lords of the Medieval Manors exercised certain rights including Hunting and Judicial rights. The Lord of the Manor was based in the Manor House and from here he conducted the business of the manor.

Manors, not villages, were the economic and social units of life in the early Middle Ages. A manor consisted of a manor house, one or more villages, and up to several thousand acres of land divided into meadow, pasture, forest, and cultivated fields. The fields were further divided into strips; 1/3 for the lord of the manor, less for the church, and the remainder for the peasants and serfs. This land was shared out so that each person had an equal share of good and poor. At least half the work week was spent on the land belonging to the lord and the church. Time might also be spent doing maintenance and on special projects such as clearing land, cutting firewood, and building roads and bridges. The rest of the time the villagers were free to work their own land.

In the Middle Ages land ownership was tied to national security. Under the feudal system all land was owned by the king. He granted territories to his earls and barons in return for military aid in need. They in turn granted lands to men who fought for them. Thus the land and its people could be protected without a standing army. The system broke down in the later Middle Ages and feudal tenure was finally abolished in England, Ireland and Wales in 1660.

The basic administrative unit was the manor. Ideally a manor was enough land to support a cavalryman - a knight's fee. He needed not only food and clothing for himself and his family, but armour, weapons and horses. The acreage needed varied according to the quality of the land. England had about 5,000-6,000 knights' fees.

It was natural for a son to follow in his father's footsteps, taking over a manor and the duty to fight. But once it was accepted that fees were inherited, then a manor could be held by a disabled man. Or it could be divided between daughters. So it might be more convenient to commute military service to a money payment. Over the centuries this gradually became the norm. So knighthood was not inherited with the manor. As a code of chivalry developed in the Middle Ages, so the prestige of the knight rose, and with it the expense of maintaining armour and trappings. Knighthood became an honour, but one that some manorial lords preferred to avoid.

Those holding manors direct from the Crown were called tenants-in-chief. Mainly these were barons and earls. In 1086 they held half of England. However the king kept about a fifth in his own hands. His manors could be granted direct to knights, who would then be tenants-in-chief. The rest of the English manors were held by the Church - mainly by monasteries or cathedrals.

People who worked on the manor are described as follows:

Vassal - A Vassal or Liege was a free man who held land (a fief) from a lord to whom he paid homage and swore fealty. A vassal could be a Lord of the Manor but was also directly subservient to a Noble or the King. (All of our Dalton's who were knight's were probably vassals under a Lord and could have been called Lord of the manor.)

A Vassal's Obligations: The vassal was required to attend the lord at his court, help administer justice, and contribute money if needed. He must answer a summons to battle, bringing an agreed upon number of fighting men. As well, he must feed and house the lord and his company when they travelled across his land.

Bailiff - A Bailiff was a person of some importance who undertook the management of manors

Reeve - A Reeve was a manor official appointed by the lord or elected by the peasants

Serf - A serf was another name for a peasant or tenant. Medieval Serfs were peasants who worked his lord's land and paid him certain dues in return for the use of land, the possession (not the ownership) of which was heritable. The dues were usually in the form of labor on the lord's land. Medieval Serfs were expected to work for approximately 3 days each week on the lord's land.

Peasant or Villein - A peasant or villein was a low status tenant who worked as an agricultural worker or laborer. A peasant or villein usually cultivated 20-40 acres of land

Cottager: A low class peasant with a cottage, but with little or no land who generally worked as a simple laborer

Servant: Servants were house peasants who worked in the lord's manor house, doing the cooking, cleaning, laundering, and other household chores.

Food and Drink. The fare at the lord's table was as full of variety as the peasant's was spare. Meat, fish, pastries, cabbage, turnips, onions, carrots, beans, and peas were common, as well as fresh bread, cheese, and fruit. At a feast spitted boar, roast swan, or

peacock might be added.

Wine or ale was drunk, never water, which was rightly considered suspect. Ale was the most common drink, but it was not the heady alcoholic drink we might imagine. It was thin, weak, and drunk soon after brewing. It must have had little effect on sobriety. Fruit juices and honey were the only sweeteners, and spices were almost unknown until after the Crusades.

Table Manners; Meat was cut with daggers and all eating was done with the fingers from trenchers, or hollowed out husks of bread. One trencher was used by two people, and one drinking cup. Scraps were thrown on the floor for the dogs to finish. There were no chimneys, and the fireplace was in the middle of the hall. Smoke escaped by the way of louvres in the roof (at least in theory).

House Layout: In the early medieval period the centre of life in castles and manors was the great hall, a huge, multipurpose chamber safely built upon the second floor. These halls were dimly lit, due to the need for massive walls with small windows for defense from attack. In the 14th century the hall descended to the ground floor, and windows grew in size, indicating increased security. The solar, or family room, remained on the first floor. It became the custom for the family to eat in the solar, leaving the great hall to minor guests and servants.

Hall life decreased as trade increased. Trades specialized and tradesmen and women moved out of the hall. The communal life of the hall declined and families became more private. Manors sustained fewer people as trades separated from the manor community.

The Peasant's Life: Villages consisted of from 10-60 families living in rough huts on dirt floors, with no chimneys or windows. Often, one end of the hut was given over to storing livestock. Furnishings were sparse; three legged stools, a trestle table, beds on the floor softened with straw or leaves. The peasant diet was mainly porridge, cheese, black bread, and a few home-grown vegetables.

Peasants had a hard life, but they did not work on Sundays or on the frequent saints' days, and they could go to nearby fairs and markets. The lot of serfs was much harsher.

The Serf's Life: Although not technically a slave, a serf was bound to a lord for life. He could own no property and needed the lord's permission to marry. Under no circumstance could a serf leave the land without the lord's permission unless he chose to run away. If he ran to a town and managed to stay there for a year and a day, he was a free man. However, the serf did have rights. He could not be displaced if the manor changed hands. He could not be required to fight, and he was entitled to the protection of the lord.

More information on daily life in medieval towns:

A new class emerged during the Middle Ages; the merchant. The growth of trade and the merchant middle class went hand in hand with the growth in towns. Town populations swelled during this period, particularly after the Black Death. Trade routes grew, though roads remained poor and dangerous, so most goods were transported by water.

Towns were built on trade, and the elite of towns were the merchants. Merchant guilds controlled town government, though they often clashed with craft guilds for power. Merchants needed stability for trade, so they supported the king and the establishment of a strong central government against the rule of individual nobles. The king, for his part, encouraged the growth of towns and trade. Town charters became a major source of royal revenue. Eventually the growth of towns and guilds led to the breakdown of the manor-centred feudal society.

Merchant guilds controlled the trade in a town. Merchant guilds regulated prices, quality, weights and measures, and business practices. The power of the guilds was absolute in their domain, and to be expelled from a guild made it impossible to earn a living. Each guild had a patron saint, celebrated religious festivals together, put on religious plays, and looked after the health and welfare of the members and their families.

Separate from the merchant guilds were the craft guilds, which regulated the quality, working hours and conditions of its members. There were three levels of craftsmen; masters, journeymen, and apprentices. Parents paid a fee to place a boy with a master craftsman as an apprentice. There he received food, lodging (often sleeping under the counter in the shop itself), clothes, and instruction in the craft.

The period of apprenticeship lasted for 2-7 years, after which time the apprentice became a journeyman. The term has nothing to do with traveling; it comes from the French "journee", (day), and meant that the journeyman was paid by the day for his work. After several years as a journeyman the craftsman would submit a piece of his best work to the guild for approval. If this "master-piece" was accepted he could become a master craftsman and own his own shop.

All townsmen were free, and this provided some incentive for serfs to run away to the towns. If they could remain there for a year and a day they were considered free and could not be compelled to return to the manor.

Before Edward I all repairs to streets were the responsibility of adjacent householders. After Edward's time town councils began to take over more responsibility. New

roadways were often built directly on top of the old with little attempt to clear it away. Thus repairs never lasted long. There was also the possibility that a citizen would build his section higher than his neighbour. Because of this practice street levels rose and rose. In London the original Roman roads are buried up to 20 feet beneath the street level of today.

Roads were narrow, and tradesmen and householders were constantly encroaching on them. Traffic moved slowly, not least because tolls at the town gates were often paid in kind (that is, with goods rather than money), causing delays and long lineups.

Sanitation was a constant concern. Open drain channels ran along the sides or down the centre of streets. Many stables opened out onto the streets and muck heaps encroached on passage. People often threw dirty water out of windows in the general direction of the drains. Dyers vats were particularly noxious when they were emptied into the street. Again the onus was on the individual householder to keep the space in front of his house relatively clean. In practice the only real incentive to do so was an outbreak of the plague or a visit of the King.

Pigs were another nuisance in the streets. Most people kept pigs. They were cheap, and a good source of food. However, houses were small and gardens even smaller, so pigs were often let out into the streets to forage. Stray pigs were such a nuisance that they were liable to be killed and the owner charged for the return of the dead animal.

Law and order in the town was enforced by the beadle or constables, who could call on citizens to form a night Watch. If a "hue and cry" was raised to chase a criminal all citizens had to join in or risk being fined. The penalty for the criminal was much higher. A thief found in possession of stolen goods was hanged.

If a fugitive managed to reach a church they could claim the right of sanctuary there for a period of 40 days. This meant that someone would have to stand watch outside the church for the entire time to ensure that the fugitive did not escape, a duty that no one wanted. Towns could even be fined if the felon escaped. At any one time in the Middle Ages it has been estimated that there were as many as 1000 people in sanctuary throughout England.

Curfews were imposed in towns to keep the peace. Originally the "curfew bell" was rung at 8 or 9 o'clock in the evening to indicate that it was time for smiths, brewers, and taverners to cease their working day. It became the custom that anyone abroad after that had to carry a light and have a good excuse for being out. The carrying of weapons was carefully regulated, especially where foreigners were concerned. Nobility, as usual, were exempt from these regulations. There were also laws prohibiting the wearing of masks in the street; this after an attempt on the life of Henry IV by some nobles disguised as

Christmas mummers.

Fire was the constant fear of town dwellers. Due to closely packed wooden houses and inadequate water supply, fires were difficult to control and could produce widespread damage. There were other factors that increased the risks of fire; Beds were of straw and were commonly kept close to open hearths for warmth. Roofs of reeds, rushes and straw were common. It was only after 1213 that these materials were forbidden in London in favour of tile and shingles. Other places were slow to follow London's lead.

Although stone building was encouraged, expense meant that most houses were built of wood up until Tudor times. Then, the flourishing new brick industry and a rapidly falling timber supply swung the tide away from wood as the material of choice for most domestic building. Cooks, barbers, and brewers were heavily regulated because of the risk their fires posed. Their premises had to be whitewashed and plastered inside and out.

Each householder was required to keep a full vessel of water outside his door in summer, due to fire risk. When fires did occur it was every citizen's duty to come running with whatever equipment they had. Often firehooks were used to haul burning thatch off a roof, and also to pull down adjacent buildings to provide a firebreak.

The day officially began with the ringing of the Angelus bell at 4 or 5 o'clock. It announced the first mass of the day and the end of the night watchman's duty. Most shops opened at 6 AM, providing plenty of early morning shopping before the first meal of the day at 9 or 10 AM.

Morning was the active time for markets. Things quieted down after noon, and most shops closed at 3 o'clock. Some kept open until light faded, and others, such as the barbers and blacksmiths, were open until the curfew bell sounded. Foreign merchants were heavily regulated. They had to wait two or more hours before they could enter the market, giving the locals the best of the business.

Markets were noisy, raucous affairs. Merchants had to "cry the wares" as their only means of advertising, and some had to be fined for forcibly grabbing hold of passers-by in their enthusiasm to make a sale.

Saturday was early closing day for shops. Usually noon was the close of business. Sunday, however, the "Lord's day of rest", was not kept as restful as we might think. Some trades were allowed to work after Mass, and some field work was allowed to be done before it. A few places even had the privilege of Sunday markets.

Bells were the main medium of telling time and making announcements. A Common Bell was rung to summon civic meetings, courts, and as an alarm in case of fire or attack. The town crier rang a hand bell when he walked throughout the town declaiming news and proclamations. The criers were the main source of news for town dwellers. They also had the task of ringing their bells to solicit prayers in memory of people who had paid for the privilege.

Each village would have had skilled craftsmen; carpenters, wheelwrights and blacksmiths. Overseeing and representing the villagers was the reeve. This person was elected by the villagers and helped defend the rights of the villagers at the manor. The hayward had to make sure the animals in the village did not stray too far or start eating the crops.

Watermills and windmills would have been a common sight in medieval villages and were used to grind the corn. The mills were owned by the Lord of the manor. Villeins were allowed to take their own corn to the mill for grinding but had to give some corn in payment for the service. Windmills were built on rotating bases so that they could be turned into the wind.

Dovecotes were buildings used to house and rear pigeons. In medieval times young pigeon meat was eaten as a delicacy. The pigeons were also kept for their eggs and their feathers. Most dovecotes are circular in shape and could hold several hundred birds. The buildings were designed to keep out rodents which could eat the eggs. The dovecotes may not have been popular with the villeins as the birds would eat their corn.

Fish was widely eaten during the Medieval era and to provide a fresh supply many manors had a fish pond constructed.

Ten percent (a tenth) of what the villages produced was given to the church. The produce was stored in a barn called a tithe barn.

Generally the village was self sufficient, meaning it could grow enough food and supply all the needs for the villagers within it. The luxuries would have been bought at the larger fairs. For more information on markets and fairs, see the Markets and Fairs page. Problems arose for the village when the weather during the year was bad. If the crops failed it was likely to cause a famine. There does not appear to have been a way of storing surplus food from good years to be used in bad years.

Large amounts of forest were cut down in medieval times as wood was required for fuel, building castles, churches, homes and ships. The reduction of woodland became so great that conservation methods were required. Coppicing was a method they used to preserve the trees while still taking what they needed from them. The idea behind coppicing is to cut back young trees so that many smaller offshoots are produced. These offshoots were

then harvested every few years. With the reduction in wood other fuels were needed. One of these was coal.

In medieval times coal was mined and used in the production of iron. Most of the coal was mined in open-cast mines where the coal seams were easily found above or just below the surface of the land. When the easily mined coal began to run out people turned to seacoal. The name seacoal is thought to have been used because the coal was found washed up on beaches but this seems unlikely. Lead iron ore and tin were also mined in medieval times.

So lets end this story about how our Dalton's lived in the middle ages, or medieval times. As you have read in the above story our Dalton family enjoyed life in the upper class of people. Thats why we can find so many records of their life.

11- Sir Roger Dalton; of Dalton, Bispham, Croston and Mawdesly, Lancashire was the son of Sir Richard Dalton and was the Patriarch of Dalton Hall, Lancashire and was born about 1470 and married his 1st, wife Anne Radcliff. He also married Miss Standyche and then married his second cousin Margaret Farynton and last, Jane Jakes.

Roger and Anne had 4 children:

1. William, heir.
1. Roger.
2. Sybell.
3. Thomas.

Roger Dalton was the husband of no less than four wives, and the father, in all, of 16 children. The eldest of all was William, his successor and heir, who gave him 13 grandchildren. His second son, Roger, left no issue, and his eldest daughter, Sybell, who grew up and married William Wolberd Drapt, is recorded as leaving no issue either.

Roger was associated as heir with his father in the grant of various lands in Croston and Mawdesley, but reserving the Manor and demesne lands. The various deeds and documents show that just as Richard had gone further afield, and established himself at Croston during his father's lifetime, so Roger was doing the same thing, and building up a family inheritance of increasing value. He is described on the pedigree as "of Dalton Hall, Yorks, and after, of Croston."

Roger married Anne, a daughter of Sir John Ratclyff. Anne was born in Wymerly in about 1475. In the Herald's Visitation of Lancashire in 1613, Roger is the earliest Dalton ancestor named in connection with the Ratclyffs. The date of their marriage is not known, but as a grant of various tenements in Bispham was made to Roger's son

William as early as 1500, it must have taken place some time before that. In 1525 Roger Dalton's name is on the list of the land-owners in Croston Parish contributing to the Subsidy. Roger Dalton was the husband of no less than four wives, and the father of at least 16 children. Roger and his first wife, Anne Ratcliff, had the heir to the Dalton line, named William.

Roger is described in the pedigree as of Dalton Hall in Yorkshyre and after of Croston. He was still possessed of lands in Yorkshire at the date of his will, but presumably moved to Croston at some stage. Perhaps on succeeding at the death of his father. This Sir Roger Dalton is thought to be the last Dalton Knight for many generations until about the 1800's when there were a few made during the time the English army was in India.

The will of Roger Dalton was proved in the Prerogative Court of the Archbishop of Canterbury and in the records is a photocopy of the enrollment of the will and of a document enrolled with it in the records of the Court. Both are in Latin, sometimes much abbreviated, and are not easy to transcribe.

The will reads:

"In the name of God Amen the tenth day of March in the year of our Lord 1531, I, Roger Dalton Knight of sound mind and good memory but sick in body make my will in this form First I bequeath my soul to omnipotent God and the blessed Mary and all the saints and elect of the church and my body to be buried in a small religious tomb in the church of Saint Michael the Archangel of Croston in the chancel of the same church with the permission and the provision of the curate of the same for the time being in office next to the tomb of my father (*corpus quo meum ad sepeliend in parva sepultura ecclesiastica sancti Michis Arch ecclie de Croston in cancello eiusdem cum licencia et providencia curati siusdem tunc pro tempe existen juxta sepultur patris mei*). Then I give and bequeath a mortuary payment to the vicar of the same church according to the Act made and constituted by the King. Next I give and bequeath to my daughters, Anne, Margaret, Joan and Elizabeth two hundred marks. Then I give and bequeath to my son Richard, four marks yearly until he be promoted to some benefice of ten pounds or more a year (*donec sit promotus ad aliquot benefice decem librarum annuatim aut ultra*) And I wish that all other things are at the disposition of Roger Jakes, Thomas Jakes and my son Richard whom I ordain make and constitute my true and lawful executors that they themselves may dispose for the benefit of my soul or as may seem better to them Then I ordain and constitute Henry Faryington, Knight Richard Bonaster, Bankes Knight and Richmond supervisors of this my testament and will. Then I wish that any debts not paid at the date of my death may be paid out of my goods. In witness of which things I have placed on this my will of one sheet of paper my seal, Given the day and year above stated." The will was proved in London on the 6th December 1543 by Roger Jakes and

Richard Dalton.

Enrolled with the will in the Prerogative Court records is a document even more difficult to transcribe than the will and also in Latin. But in substance I think it says;

"Know all men present and future that I, Roger Dalton, Knight, have given determined and by this my document confirmed to Anthony Lathom, gentleman, Thomas Bond, Vicar of the Church of Croston, Richard Clerk, Vicar of the Church of Leigh and Adam Bonaster, all my messuages, lands, tenements, meadows, grazings, pastures, rents and all their appurtenances in Dalton in the County of Yorkshire (in Dalton in comitate Eboraci) to have and to hold all and singular these messuages, lands, tenements and other premises aforesaid to Anthony Lathom, Thomas Bond, Richard Clerk and Adam Bonaster and their assigns for ever to the use and intent of fulfilling this my last will and testament annexed to this document so that after fulfilling the said will all the said messuages, lands, tenements and other premises may remain wholly and rightly to the heir's of me the said Roger in perpetuity."

There then follow sentences in which Roger appears to say that he and his heirs will warrant and defend all the said premises to Anthony Thomas, Richard and Adam against all men and he appoints Thomas Lathom as his lawful attorney to obtain possession of all the said premises for Anthony Thomas, Richard and Adam.

The document was sealed by Roger with his seal in the presence of John Smyth, chaplain George Nelson, Thomas Graveson, John Stopforth and others on the 10th day of March in the 23rd year of the reign of King Henry VIII (1531).

12- William Dalton; was the third son of Sir Roger Dalton was born 1513, in Byspham in Lancashire. He married Jane Towneley and whose second son Roger was the continuation of our Dalton line. At one time, his older son, Robert died without issue, he took over as the Lord of Thurnham Hall a few miles below the town of Lancaster. Thurnham Hall just below the town of Lancaster, is very famous in the annals of Dalton history and may be read in my Dalton book.

With William we reach the second of those much larger families which distinguish the Dalton's of the Tudor period. His first wife was Margaret, daughter of Sir William Torbrock of Torbrock Hall. Gregson gives Dalton of Bispham among the Torbrock alliances, but in spite of the seven children born to them, none left descendants. William married secondly, Jane, daughter of Sir John Towneley. Some documents claim Jane was illegitimate. In the Chetham Society's publication (Vol. 98) dealing with the Visitation of Lancashire in 1533, the Towneley pedigree shows Sir John Towneley had married one daughter into the Hesketh family; another to a Shirburne, and a third to a Banastre.

In 1533 William Dalton "demised to Thomas Hough an acre of the hill and half an acre in the town meadow in Croston" (VCHL VI p. 92). William and Jane had at least eight children.

In 1533 William Dalton "demised to Thomas Hough an acre of the hill and half an acre in the town meadow in Croston" (VCHL VI p. 92). William and Jane had at least eight children which the one named Roger, next inherited this Dalton line.

When William Dalton died in 1543, there devolved on his eldest son, Robert (not our line), the care of his widowed mother (Jane) and the younger members of the family. Trouble and change were the lot that lay before them, due both directly and indirectly to fidelity to the Roman Catholic faith in which they had been bred, and which brought ever more and more severe penalties on its adherents. The Reformation begun under Henry VIII had involved, with the suppression of the Monasteries in 1536 and 1539, not only religious difficulties, but immense changes in land ownership, since thousands of acres and a vast amount of real property were thrown back into the hands of the Crown, and by it sold or leased to new owners.

The Will of William Dalton, son of Roger Dalton of Croston:

William Dalton the elder son of Roger Dalton by his first marriage is described in the pedigree as "of Bispham", though he must have continued to hold the Croston property, under some settlement of it. In the pedigree his second wife Jane is described as the "bass" daughter of Sir John Towneley, the Towneleys being another important Lancashire family. However, in the addenda and corrigenda in the volume of the Harleian Society in which the pedigree appears, there is a note that Jane Towneley is not called a bass daughter in the Visitation of Lancaster in 1613, p 32, where the issue of her son Thomas is given. It will also be seen that in the pedigree Ellen, William's aunt is described as Lady Garter. It is noted in the addenda and corrigenda that she was the wife, first of Rigbys and secondly, of Sir Christopher Barker, Garter, King-at-Arms.

There is a copy of William's will in the Towneley manuscripts held in the Manuscripts Department of the British Library, where I have inspected it. It is in a bound volume and is numbered 1474 in that volume. There is a note at the front of the volume, Evidences of Lancashire Gentry, and the manuscripts were purchased at a sale at Sotheby's in 1883.

The will reads:

"In the name of god Amen. I William Dalton of Bispham in ye County of Lancs. Esq. 28th November in the year of Henry VIII ye 35th and in the year of our lord 1543 my testament and last will duly made in manner and form following first I ordayne Jane my wife my Executrix. Also I give unto Richard my youngest some all my portion of goods

which remain over and above my debts and funeral expenses. Also I will yt that my said wife by the decease of Richard Radcliffe myne Uncle shall have all the goods which I ought to have. Also I will yt that my said wife shall bestowe such sums of money as she shall receive for the marriage of my son and heir upon the marriage of my four daughters, Jane, Margery, Anne and Margaret. And also I ordayne Sir Henry Ffaryngton, Knight and Raufe Bradshaws, Esq. to be supervisors of this my said will and to the same I have sett my seale and subscribed my name the day and year first above written. These being witnesses, Alexander Hoghton, Sir Robert (?) John Waddington, Thomas Bowker, Ann (?) and Thomas Rydinge"

At this point in the story well will tell about Robert Dalton 1529-1578, first son of William Dalton who plays a very big part of our Dalton family. He purchased the estate of Thurnham near Lancaster.

Although the eldest son, Robert, is not our line, it becomes necessary to outline his history because the lives of the four brothers are closely intertwined.

Robert died without male issue. One might assume that there were female issue; however, I have no records to suggest names of possible children.

Robert's widowed mother, Jane, is mentioned in several transactions. The earliest is in 1545, when "Matthew, son and heir to Christopher, conveyed to Jane Dalton, widow, and Robert her son, heir of William Dalton, deceased, a messuage called Keyhouse, with land in Croston; also a close of pasture called Castlepol Hey in Mawdesley." In 1546 Jane claimed a close called Castle Place against Henry Croston; also lands called the Paradise, Oldfield, Westhead, Withens and Hilifield. In 1550 she again claims a tenement in Croston against Henry Croston. In 1555 Richard Ashton claimed various property against Seth Worsley and Anne his wife. This Anne was the daughter of the Old Uncle William named in Roger Dalton's grant of 1527.

In 1543 the Crown granted the site of Cockersand Abbey to John Kitchen whose daughter Anne married Robert Dalton I who seems to have held Cockersand absolutely. He died in 1578 holding the site from the queen by knight's service. He also held Cockshotts in Ellet and the Bankhouses in Cockerham. All passed to his nephew Robert Dalton III who held by knight's service in 1626.

In 1556 Richard Ashton purchased property from "Jane Dalton, widow; Robert Dalton and Anne his wife" and it was the beginning of a series of sales in which the three names are associated. Sir Thomas Hesketh bought "the fourth parts of the manor of Croston with all other their hereditaments there" (VCHL VI page 93). In 1558 Bispham itself went to two men, William Stopford and Richard Mason of Wrightington and Parbold. In 1560 Robert Dalton I gave Aldcliffe Hall and the Ridge in Bulk to his mother Jane,

widow of William Dalton. In 1573 he settled Abbot's Carr on his brother Thomas and Anne his wife, with the remainder to two other brothers, Roger and Richard. In 1571 he gave a rent of £2 a year to Robert Walmesley of Lincoln's Inn. Thurnham was sated in the Inquisition to be held in socage, at a rent of 6s8d, from William Curwen, late of Glasson.

In 1574 the Mayor and Corporation of Lancaster granted Robert Dalton of Thurnham a lease of a suitable plot in the waste of the town of Lancaster, commonly called the Green Ayre, on which plot he was to build a large house for a water-mill or two mills at the point he considered most suitable. He was allowed to make a mill-stream and dam.

Robert Dalton of Thurnham: By R.N.D. Hamilton of the DGS in England.

William's eldest son by his second marriage, Robert established the Dalton's Thurnham estate and indeed other estates as well.

Our Dalton pedigree shows that Robert married Anne, daughter of John Kechyn. John Kechyn, who was of Hatfield, Hertfordshire, Esq. was supervisor of the Augmentation Office and became M.P. for the county of Lancaster. The Court of Augmentations was a branch of the Exchequer formed in 1535 to carry out the dissolution of the Monasteries and dispose of their land and property. Ten years later, by deed dated 29th August 1554, the abbey lands were conveyed, on the marriage of his daughter, to Robert Dalton of Bispham. Two years later, on the 24th June 1556, Thomas Lonna or Lowm. a citizen of London sold the manor of Thurnham to Robert for £1,500, having purchased it four years earlier from the Duke of Suffolk for £1,080. In 1556 and 1557 Robert bargained for lands formerly attached to the Priory of Lancaster. The Priory possessions were described in a document signed by "Gilbert Moreton, deputy of John Kechyn, our supervisor there", and on 22nd March 1557 rated for Robert Dalton for the purchase money of £1,268. 17s. 4d. The possessions that he purchased included the Aldcliffe and Bulk estates. Aldcliffe is just north of Lancaster. Bulk (local pronunciation Book according to the VCH and formerly known as Newton, a name long obsolete) lies on the north side of Lancaster, part of it now in a suburb, and is bounded on the west and north by the river Lune. (VCH Lancs. Vol. 8 Pages 49 and 50).

Oliver Roper says: "Thus it was that Robert Dalton became possessed of a stretch of country extending from a point on the River Lum, three miles above Lancaster, to one on that river nearly six miles below, intercepted only by the lands of the borough of Lancaster and the demesne of Ashton Hall. On such a large estate it was only fitting that a substantial residence should be erected, and probably Thurnham Hall owes its foundation to Robert Dalton".

No doubt to help provide him with the money required for his Thurnham and associated enterprises, Robert sold the Dalton interests in the Manors of both Bispham and Croston. He sold the Bispham estate in 1558 to William Stopford.

13- Roger Dalton; was the second son of William Dalton was the trustee of Thurnham Hall and other lands and was born about 1531 in Byspham, Lancashire England. He died in 1588 in the Holbon area of London, England. As far as we know, Roger Dalton was the first of our Dalton line to move from Lancashire Co. He may have bought land and settled in Witney, Oxfordshire England.

He married Mary Ward and they had at least seven children:

1. Millicant
2. Anne.
3. Robert.
4. Thomas.
5. Walter I, next in line of our Dalton's. He moved to Witney in Oxfrdshire.
6. Richard.
7. Joan.

During the long minority of the heir of Thurnham Hall (Robert II), Roger's name occurs frequently in business matters. In the year after Robert I death, a grant of lands in Cockersand for 21 years was made to Roger. In 1581 he claimed turbary (the right of a tenant to dig on his overlord's land) in Preesall Moss and a messuage (use of a house, its lands and outbuildings) called Quatholme or Wheatholme, against Robert Carter. In 1582 a house called Friars Moss, near Quernmore Park, part of the Rigmaidens estate, was sold to him. He held burgages (right of rent) (in Lancaster). In virtue of a lease from Queen Elizabeth 1, he claimed the Furness land in Forton. In 1583 he purchased from Adams an estate in Pilling of 40 messuages, 500 acres of salt marsh, etc., which in 1586 was granted to feoffees (tenants) by "Anne Dalton, widow, Barnaby Kitchen, and Hugh Hesketh," and next year (1587) the feoffees with Roger Dalton sold the greater part to Robert Bindloss.



Old drawing of Thurnham Hall

Notes for Roger Dalton, 1531-1592.

And from the will of Anne Dalton (widow of Robert I of Thurnham), made April 9, 1593, we learn that Roger Dalton was already deceased and his heirs were bound to pay to her assigns E40, a year for 50 years after her death. She left this to be divided between her brother, Barnaby Kitchen and Elizabeth Hartley, whose husband was her executor. Barnaby was also to have "one pair of bed stocks"; a "cozen John Thornton, 2 oxen", and her nieces Anne and Elizabeth Kitchin, 40 shillings each

Roger Dalton acquired part of the Cockersand Abbey estate after the dissolution of the monasteries. In 1586 Anne Dalton granted this to feoffees. In 1587 the feoffees and Roger Dalton sold most of it to Robert Brindloss of Borwick. Roger Dalton died in Holbon, which is in the greater area of London and holding the Lower End of Pillings in Lancashire. Roger Dalton was probably in London doing business as a wool merchant because i believe he also was living in the Witney/Curbridge where he and his son Walter raised sheep.

Before we go to the next generation of Dalton's lets back up a few years and tell about all the wars or Dalton Knight's fought in:

Our early Dalton family has a known history of being Knight's in the service of the King's of England and there were a long series of Dalton men who was known to have taken the call to join these King's or his Lords to fight in various wars, battles, uprisings, and especially to fight in the many English and Scottish wars in the late 1200's and early 1300's. Then we hear about the notorious battles with the French later on.

The story of a medieval times knight begins at the start of the period when they were simply hired hands for battle and ends with the close of the era when knighthood was an honored station. What comes in between for the medieval times knight is a lot of warfare, a rise to landed power and the creation of a mystique that keeps their legend alive today.

At their first appearance, medieval times knights were quite literally hired hands to help fight battles. The medieval times knight of the early period was a warrior who would swear loyalty to a leader and fight for him in exchange for land or money. It was the medieval times knight's mission to spill blood or have it spilled on the field of battle should a liege call.

As the middle ages continued, the medieval times knight began to pass on land grants from father to son, creating a class of nobility in and of itself. With the land came responsibility for the medieval times knight. As time marched forward the former mercenary, the medieval times knight, was involved in local politics, justice dealing and other workings of government.

Gone were the days of a simple exchange for a sword in battle. With the crusades and other organized battles, the medieval times knight became bound to codes of honor along with their oaths of loyalty. Whether chivalric law or religious convictions, medieval times knights were expected to act a certain way and fight a certain way, giving rise to the legends that made the class of medieval times knight famous.

When it came to fighting, the medieval times knight was expected to follow his code of honor. With the church heavily involved in the politics of Europe, the medieval times knight was subjected to rules that included the limitations of days of battle to exclude days of religious importance. In addition to religious restrictions, the medieval times knight also became subject to a romanticized law as well. Medieval times knights, especially after the crusades, were expected to behave in a certain manner.

Weaponry and armor are often what set medieval times knight class members apart from commoners over and above any land one might own. Well made steel armor and

weapons were a sign of wealth and status and were often handed down from father to son along with land and title. The more elaborate the weaponry and armor, the higher the status of the medieval times knight.

The life of a medieval times knight was not all romance and glory, however. Knights were expected to fight and die for their liege. Their oaths of loyalty bound them to a single noble or warlord and that noble or warlord's own oath could have them fighting in battles that had little or nothing to do with their own concerns. From hired sword to landed wealth, the medieval times knight both shaped and was shaped by the period giving rise to legends that inspire enthusiasts today.

The knight was one of three types of fighting men during the middle ages: Knights, Foot Soldiers, and Archers. The medieval knight was the equivalent of the modern tank. He was covered in multiple layers of armor, and could plow through foot soldiers standing in his way. No single foot soldier or archer could stand up to any one knight. Knights were also generally the wealthiest of the three types of soldiers. This was for a good reason. It was terribly expensive to be a knight. The war horse alone could cost the equivalent of a small airplane. Armor, shields, and weapons were also very expensive. Becoming a knight was part of the feudal agreement. In return for military service, the knight received a fief. In the late middle ages, many prospective knights began to pay "shield money" to their lord so that they wouldn't have to serve in the king's army. The money was then used to create a professional army that was paid and supported by the king. These knights often fought more for pillaging than for army wages. When they captured a city, they were allowed to ransack it, stealing goods and valuables.



A Knight in full armor.

The first of our Dalton's to fight in battles for their King was this le Sieur de Dalton, of as some say, Sir Walter De Aliton or Dalton. He fought in the invasion of England and Ireland. You have already read this above.

The next written name of a Dalton Knight to have fought in a war was "Sir Richard de Dalton I son of John and great-grandson of Sir Walter and who was born about 1165 in the little village of Dalton, near Wigan in Lancashire, England. He was a crusader in 1187 & killed several Saracen's in the Holy land and from that the family took the green griffin in its crest. He returned home, married and had a son. He is buried at Dalton with his legs crossed." The source of this statement was John Luther Dalton, Sir Richard's 17th great- grandson who went to England in 1865 and again in 1886 to serve a mission for his church and researched the records of the time to make a pretty close pedigree about his Dalton ancestors.

Of note is this date may be entered wrong because the second Crusade had ended by 1149 and there were no great battles until the third Crusade starting from about 1189 and was led by King Richard I the Lion-Hearted. But again we must say that there were also the Order of the Knights Templars who were always in the Holy land areas from the years of 1118. Every Knights Templars had the right to be buried with his legs crossed to shoe he gave battle in the holly wars.

The Order of the Temple, or "Knights Templar," referred to by Pope Innocent III as "The Knighthood of God," was formed in 1118 by nine French knights who traveled to the Holy Land on a Holy Quest. The brave founding Knights formed the first religious / military Order of Knighthood, offering protection to Christian pilgrims traveling to the Holy Land. Later, the Order became the first soldier monks of the ancient Christian Church, Crusading in the Holy Land against the Saracens, helping to establish and maintain the Latin Kingdom of Jerusalem for almost two hundred years.

The English King Richard I answered the call of the Pope in 1190 and raised an army of men and Knight's to go fight in the Holy Wars. He departed for the Holy Land sometime in 1190. In 1191 he conquered Cyprus en route to Jerusalem, and he performed admirably against Saladin, nearly taking the holy city twice. He made the mistake when returning home to cross the lands of his enemy, Leopold V of Austria and was captured and sent to prison and his people had to pay a very large ransom for his release in 1194.

Our Sir Richard de Dalton I must have been rewarded a Knighthood by either Richard I or his father, King Henry II. We cannot say which one at this time.

Next we have Sir Richard de Dalton II, the son of the first Richard and who was born about 1230.

He had three sons who were also Knight's; Sir Henry de Dalton, who was Sheriff of Lancaster in 1318. Sir Robert de Dalton, our direct line and Sir John de Dalton, as per Flowers Visitation of Yorkshire, who was the founder of the Kirby Misperton, Yorkshire Dalton line.

Henry III was King of England from about 1226 to 1272. Our Sir Richard de Dalton and his brothers were probably involved in some of the rebellions of these times. In the history books you will read about the nobility who wished to bind the king to same feudal laws under which they were held. The emerging class of free men also demanded the same protection from the king's excessive control. Barons, nobility, and free men began viewing England as a community rather than a mere aggregation of independent manors, villages, and outlying principalities. Matters came to a head in 1258 when Henry levied extortionate taxes to pay for debts incurred through war with Wales, failed campaigns in France resulting in the outbreak of civil war in 1264. Edward, Henry's eldest son, led the king's forces with the opposition commanded by Simon de Montfort, Henry's brother-in-law. At the Battle of Lewes, in Sussex, de Montfort defeated Edward and captured both king and son - and found himself in control of the government.

Was our Sir Richard de Dalton supporting King Henry III or was he one of the rebel Knight's who sided with Simon de Montfort. Again we can never know until some record turns up to tell us.

Before we go further in time, let's tell about the battles that were fought between the English and the Scottish peoples in which our Dalton Knight's must have been involved with, only because of their location in Dalton and Bispham in Lancashire and in Yorkshire, south of the Scottish border. The Dalton's were Sir Richard de Dalton II, born in 1230 and his son, Sir Robert de Dalton, born in 1270 and his sons, named above, were the knights who probably fought in the English and Scottish wars in the late 1200's and early 1300's

The three English King's at this time were the Edward's; Edward I and his son, Edward II, and his son Edward III.

The First War began with the English invasion of Scotland in 1296, called the First War of Scottish Independence and can be loosely divided into four parts. The initial English invasion and success in 1296; the campaigns led by William Wallace, Andrew de Moray and various Scottish Guardians from 1297 until John Comyn negotiated for the general Scottish submission in February 1304; the renewed campaigns led by Robert the Bruce between his coronation in 1306 and the Scottish victory at Bannockburn in 1314; and a final phase of Scottish diplomatic initiatives and military campaigns in Scotland, Ireland and Northern England from 1314 until the Treaty of Edinburgh-Northampton in 1328.

Some battles between these two country's including the following:

Battle of Dunbar Date - 1296 - Setting - Dunbar, Scotland. Combatants - Guardians of Scotland .vs. King Edward I of England (Longshanks)

King John Balliol was placed on the throne in 1292. He was a weak King, but he was a King nonetheless, something Scotland hadn't had since 1286. Edward I of England, having already conquered Wales, set his eyes on Scotland. In 1296, he marched North with an army of 30,000 infantry and 5000 cavalry. He invaded Scotland. He first arrived at Berwick, Scotland's main trading town. He sacked the town, mercilessly killing practically the whole town's population. He then marched to Dunbar and defeated a Scots army sent to meet him. Scotland was now in Edward's hands. He marched to Scone and removed the famous 'Stone of Destiny' and removed it to Westminster Abbey, where it

The war began in earnest with Edward I's sacking of Berwick in March 1296, followed by the Scottish defeat at the Battle of Dunbar and the abdication of John Balliol in July. The English invasion campaign had subdued most of the country by August and, after removing the Stone of Destiny from Scone Abbey and transporting it to Westminster Abbey, Edward convened a parliament at Berwick, where the Scottish nobles paid homage to him as King of England. Scotland had been all but conquered.

The revolts which again broke out in early 1297, was led by William Wallace, Andrew de Moray and other Scottish nobles, forced Edward to send more forces to deal with the Scots, and although they managed to force the nobles to capitulate at Irvine, Wallace and de Moray's continuing campaigns eventually led to the first key Scottish victory, at Stirling Bridge on 11th September 1297. This was followed by Scottish raids into northern England and the appointment of Wallace as Guardian of Scotland in March 1298. But in July, Edward invaded again, intending to crush Wallace and his followers, and defeated the Scots at Falkirk. Edward I failed to subdue Scotland completely before returning to England.



William Wallace

Battle of Falkirk Date - 1298 - Setting - Falkirk, Scotland. Combatants - Sir William Wallace (Guardian of Scotland) .vs. King Edward I of England.

After Wallace's victory at Stirling, he was knighted and given the title 'Guardian of Scotland'. Edward I, on the other hand, was in Flanders, hoping to secure new land for the English crown. On hearing of the defeat of his entire northern army, he headed home. He then marched north with 87,500 troops. Wallace could only muster about one third of that. When Edward arrived in Kirkliston, he considered retreating after he saw the Lothians had become a desert. However, two Scottish knights sent a message to him, betraying Wallace's whereabouts. The following day, Edward's army rode to Falkirk where they attacked the Scots. The Scottish knights also betrayed Wallace, turning and riding from the field at the vital moment. Like most of the Scottish nobles, they would rather have fought for the English where they believed chivalry was best served. The Scots army suffered severe slaughter. The retreating body of Wallace's men was too small to hold Stirling and had to pass it by. There was little gain in Edward's victory, but he had defeated Wallace. On the banks of the River Forth, Wallace sadly renounced his guardianship. He was now an outlaw again.

Battle of Loudon Hill Date - 1307 - Setting - Loudon, Scotland. Combatants - King Robert the Bruce .vs. King Edward I of England.

After Wallace's execution in 1305, there was little hope for Scotland. Edward was making the final plans to merge Scotland into England. Edward was an old man though, and would not last much longer. In 1306, something happened that tore the very heart out of Edwards plan's. On the 27th March, 1306, Robert the Bruce, Earl of Carrick, and claimant to the throne of Scotland, crowned himself at Scone. As you can imagine, Edward I was outraged and immediately headed north to topple King Robert. At Loudon hill, King Robert met his first defeat. He was now an outlaw, forced to seek shelter wherever he could. Hardly befitting for a King. Scotland would have been finished then and there if it wasn't for the greatest stroke of luck ever to happen to Scotland. On 7th July 1307, Edward marched north for the last time, his aim - to seek out Robert the Bruce. Thankfully, as he was just about to cross the border, he collapsed and died. Edward was replaced by his much weaker son (Edward II) who had no interest whatsoever of continuing the campaign in Scotland. The army returned home, and King Robert came out of hiding.

Bannockburn (23-24th June 1314)

The Scots under King Robert the Bruce win an essential battle against the English.

Halidon Hill - (1333) Edward the 3rd of England defeated the Scots.

There was then relative peace for awhile, however, at this time in history the outbreak of the Hundred Years' War with France in 1337 started, and Edward III left Scotland alone.

The Scots continued to attack England. David II invaded England in 1346, but at the Battle of Neville's Cross he was defeated and captured, and was imprisoned for 11 years. In 1513 James IV of Scotland, who had declared himself an active ally of France against England, led an army of 30,000 into northern England, but he was defeated and killed at the Battle of Flodden, in Northumberland.



The Battle of Flodden

The Battle of Flodden or Flodden Field was fought in the county of Northumberland, in northern England on 9 September 1513, between an invading Scots army under King James IV and an English army commanded by Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey. It ended in a victory for the English and a bloody defeat for the Scots and was the largest battle (in terms of numbers) fought between the two nations.

And so these were some of the Scottish battles our Dalton knight's may have fought with their King's of England.

Lets now go back to Sir Robert de Dalton, son of Sir Richard de Dalton II and who was born about 1270. Below is a article copied from the Dalton Genealogical Society Journal, by Dr. Lucy Joan Slater.

“The Flower's Visitation of Yorkshire in 1563-4 gave the main pedigree of the Dalton family. It started with Sir Rychard of Byspham born about 1230 and holding the manors of Byspham in Lancashire and Kirkby Misperton in Yorkshire. He had two sons, Sir Robert and Sir John. Sir John held the manor of Kirkby in 1332 and may have founded the Yorkshire line of Dalton's. Sir Robert was born in 1284 and died in 1350. About 1320, he married Mary, the daughter of Sir Thomas Lathom and she bore him a son, Sir John Dalton. Sir Robert had sided with the Earl of Lancaster who was beheaded in 1322 and Sir Robert was confined to Pontifract Castle for a time. However, his friends raised a ransom for him, so he was released and allowed to go back to his home at Byspham Manor. In 1327, when Edward II came to the throne, the fine was returned to Sir Robert

and he was made Keeper of the Royal Forests and then the Constable of the Tower of London.

In the spring of 1346, King Edward II prepared to invade France. He assembled the greatest army seen in England up to that date. With the King were his son, Richard the Black Prince, 12 Earls, over 1000 Knights, 4000 esquires, 20,000 archers and an unnumbered host of yeomen, blacksmiths, messengers, masons, cooks, minstrels and other camp followers.

So we can imagine Sir Robert riding from his home in Byspham, clad in his best armour, wearing his plumed helm and carrying his great broad sword, his lance and with his shield in azure blue with the silver lion on his chest. He would be riding his great war horse which would be clad in armour. By his side was his son, Sir John, also in his best armour and behind them an esquire carrying a banner with the full coat of arms embroidered on it, complete with the green Griffen. They were also accompanied by a priest who bore a portable altar and some new winding sheets, just in case things did not go too well. The party rode down through Lancashire gathering more men of arms at every town and joined the Earl of Manchester. Then they brought the French to face them at Crecy, one of the most historical battles of all time. The English had the new technology of the day, bows and arrows, and of course easily won the battle.”
End

“Sir Robert Dalton was the first direct Dalton ancestor whose life is documented in some detail. The documentation comes about because he was actively engaged in public affairs during the reigns of Edward II and Edward III. His Grandfather was Sir Richard de Dalton, the some what legendary ancestor whose exploits crusading earned the green griffin crest for his family.

Sir Robert had the upbringing appropriate to his position in feudal society and appears to have been knighted at a young age. He succeeded to his inheritance at the death of his father in 1293; owning land, largely in the Hundred of Leyland at Bispham and Dalton. Land in the latter manor was held with the Holland family. In references to Sir Robert in the official records, various members of the Holland family are often associated with activities of the Dalton's. Up-Holland their original manor is close to both Bispham and Dalton but the families were not only neighbors but very probably related. Their coat of arms were only distinguished by the cross-lets of the Dalton's and the fleur de lis of the Hollands. Mrs. Leaning produces further evidence of such a link, "in one manuscript pedigree, drawn up by an unknown hand, our pedigree it surfaced by several of the Hollands, one of them Adam being the immediate progenitor of the first de Dalton".

Sir Robert was one of the knights in the train of Thomas, Earl of Lancaster Edward II's cousin. He is mentioned in various deeds relating to the Earl's affairs and another

relation John de Dalton was the Earl's bailiff. The "favorite knight" of the Earl, however, was Sir Robert de Holland on whom was lavished lands and money. Sir Robert was created a Baron in 1314.

The Earl of Lancaster was one of the great landed magnates of England and he became a focal point for the growing opposition to Edward II's unsuccessful regime. The loss of Scotland and the corruption of the government by the favorites of the King, who incidentally was a homosexual, were more than many feudal notables couldn't stand and rebellion followed. Lancaster, however, made the mistake of trying to enlist the support of the Scots and this rallied some otherwise wavering nobles to the support of the King.

Thomas, The Earl of Lancaster, had been raised to a even greater position, and was in fact among the most powerful nobles in the realm. He was of the blood royal, and within seven generations could count 5 kings as his direct ancestors, to say nothing of Rollo, duke of Normandy and Charles III of France, before William the Conqueror.

In 1320 our Sir Robert Dalton was one of the witnesses to a charter granted by the Earl and it was not at all surprising that when the Earl used force to separate the weak King from his favorites that a conclusive family like the Dalton should be in the Earl's party. But the results were disastrous. Not all of the Earl's broad land, or his great popularity, or even his kinship with Royalty availed to save him. When a great man falls, so do other lesser one's fall with him.

The rebellion was defeated at the Battle of Boroughbridge in Yorkshire in 1322 and Sir Robert de Dalton fought with the Earl. Sir Robert de Holland, however, arrived too late with his reinforcements and then, seeing the Earl's cause was lost, wasted no time in pillaging the belongings of the Earl's supporters, taking goods to the value of £1,000. He made his peace with the King and advanced in royal favor. In 1328, however, the followers of the Earl had their revenge and he was ambushed and killed. His head was sent to the new Earl of Lancaster as a symbol of revenge.

Thus in July of 1322, we find our Sir Robert Dalton in big trouble – only because of the deed his son, John was involved in. A order was issued by the King to Thomas Deyvill, constable of Pontefract Castle, to receive Phillip de la Beche, John de Acton, Robert Dalton and John Blaket as prisoners. Sir Robert was arrested and imprisoned in the dungeons of Pontefract Castle and his lands forfeited. The Earl was executed and many of his supporters hanged, but Sir Robert escaped with one year's imprisonment and a small fine which was after-wards canceled. The Holland connection may have helped in this respect.

During the next twelve months must have been a black year for our Sir Robert. His land had been lost, his wife and little son, living one supposes, on sufferance, and his friends

clearly making frantic efforts to raise the great sum necessary for his ransom.

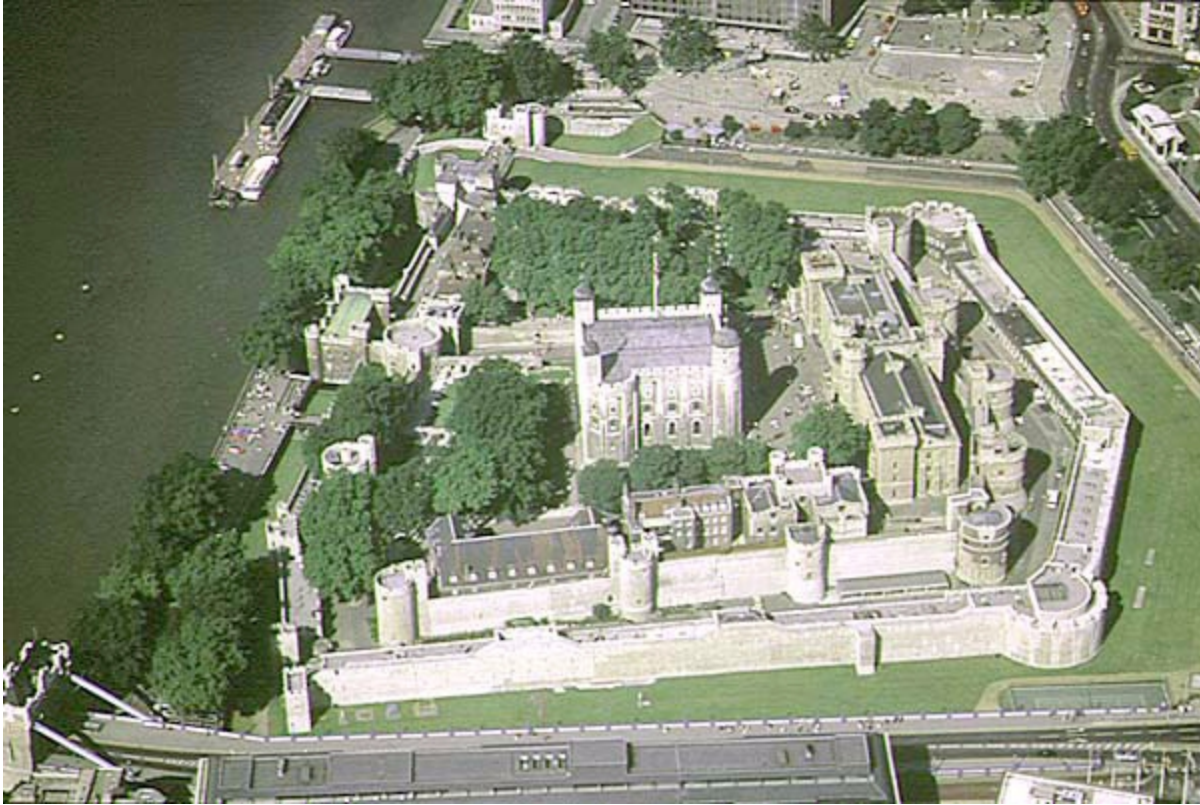
On August 12th, 1323, the King "ordered Richard de Mosele, Constable of Pontefract Castle to release Sir Robert, Knight, a late rebel from prison in that Castle, so that he may come to the King to make security for his good behavior, hereafter, as certain persons have prayed the King to deliver him and to have made security for 100 marks, where-in they made fine to save the said Sir Robert's life"

A week later, the King come to further order: "to John de Lancastre. Keeper of certain rebels land in the County of Lancaster, to deliver to Sir Robert Dalton, Knight, his lands as he has made ransom to the King for his life and lands." Sir Robert Dalton made good use of his restoration to favor, for three years later he is found holding the position of keeper of the Kings Royal Forest at Blakeburnshire Chase on the borders of Lancashire and Yorkshire.

Sir Robert's military talents were also put to use and he was connected with the Bishop of Durham, the Earl of Derby, Henry de Percy and Ralph de Neville, in organizing the defense of Northern England. He also served abroad since, in April 1341, he received a payment of £46 "for wages in the King's services beyond the seas".

In Nov. 1343, and to Feb. 1346, Sir Robert held the lucrative position of Constable of the Tower of London, The Kings most important prison. He was not continuously in residence there as some of the directives he received about his duties refer to Sir Robert "or to him who supplies his place there". He relinquished his position in 1346 and received a grant of the "farm revenue" of Apthorpe in Northamptonshire which amounted to 40 a year.

Leaving the Tower, Sir Robert immediately resumed his military career and joined Edward III in the invasion of France. He was present at the Battle of Crecy in 1346 and the Siege of Calais. Among his relatives and connections accompanying the King were the inevitable de Hollands, Sir William de Dalton, Controller of the King's Household and later his Treasurer, and John de Dalton, the Royal Sergeant-at-Arms."



Tower of London

Sir John Dalton I, son of Sir Robert de Dalton was born about 1302 and died in 1369.

He is famous for a black deed he was involved on 31 March, 1347.

“Sir John Dalton with the aid of Baron Robert de Holland and four other Knights, abducted a married women from her home, killing her Uncle, a Priest and various servants, terrified some of the Royal children who were staying there and stole valuables worth 1.000 pounds. Sir John married the lady the same day and fled northwards to take refuge with the Hollands at Up-Holland. Afterwards he got a ship to take him and the lady overseas. His father Sir Robert, however, was not so fortunate. He was arrested and sent to the Tower of London and his lands were seized, this was in 1347. Once again the Holland connection may have helped. Sir Robert was released in May 1348 and his lands restored. His wife's name is also given in the document of pardon; the only reference to her existence. She was Mary Latham, daughter of Sir Thomas Latham, a Lancashire neighbor. Sir John also emerged from the whole business more or less unscathed. In 1350 he was pardoned, and only one month later even more surprisingly was granted an annuity of £50 a year, so "that he may the better maintain himself in the King's service". The service was in the French Wars and Sir John is mentioned in connection with various incidents in the Hundred Years War”.

Source: by Mrs. Morag Simpson.

So as you have read, Sir John Dalton I served in the French wars at the time and at the start of the Hundred Years War.

The "Hundred Years' War" between France and England (1336-1453) was an episodic struggle lasting well over a hundred years. The first big battle was fought in the French town of Crecy.



The Hundreds Years War Battle scene

The Battle of Crécy, fought on Saturday, August 26, 1346 was the first of several significant battles during which the longbow triumphed over crossbowmen and armoured knights.

French forces numbered approximately 36,000. English forces numbered approximately 12,000 of which approximately 7,000 were archers.

The English army, occupying the top of a gentle ridge near the town, consisted of three groups of men-at-arms and spearmen, with archers placed on their sides. The archers formed ranks resembling an outward V.

Each English archer carried 2 sheaves of arrows (48) into battle. Resupply was accomplished by going back thru the lines or having more brought forward. Arrows, depending on type and weight, could be shot 250 to 300 yards. The English archers

could shoot an average of 10 arrows per minute.

The total number of arrows shot during the battle is estimated at a half million.

There were 14 to 16 charges made against the English lines from the start of the battle at 4:00 PM until the completion at midnight. Casualties were estimated from 5,000 (low) to 10,000 or more (high) for the French Knights and Genoese crossbowmen. English casualties were several hundred.

Crecy was probably the first battle our Sir John Dalton I was in and he may have been in others, but we must search this out in the records.

Sir John Dalton II was the son of Sir John I and we have no record of his fighting in any major wars or battles. He may have served in the North of England during the Second War of Independence with Scotland. This Sir John had 2 sons who were also Knight's. Sir Rychard Dalton of Althorp, Northamptonshire, England and Sir John Dalton. There is no reason not to think these mentioned Dalton's did not have to fight in some battles because they were in some kind of service to their Lord and King.

Below is some battles fought in what is called the "Hundred Years' War":

(1346) The Battle of Crécy:

After the battle of Sluys, Edward III landed in Normandy in July 1346 with about 10,000 men. The French pursued. Edward III decided to halt near Crecy in Normandy and to prepare for battle the next day. However, the French vanguard made contact and started to attack without the benefit of a plan. The French made as many as 15 attacks and the English checked each one in turn mainly because of the English long bowmen. At the end, the French were decimated and the English had a decisive victory.

(1347) The Battle of Calais:

After the victory at Crecy, the English forces marched to Calais and began a successful siege that was to last a year. The French army tried to relieve Calais but retreated after finding the English position too strong. The English turned Calais into a operations base for further forays into France. It remained in English hands until 1558.

(1348) The arrival of the Black Plague in Europe and England effectively puts a damper on hostile activities. England loses approximately one-third of its population; France loses approximately one-fourth of its population.

(1356) The Battle of Poitiers:

The second major engagement of the Hundred Years' War. After a break of six years, warfare erupts again when Edward the Black Prince, son of King Edward III, raids France in 1356. King John II of France pursued Edward. Outside of Poitiers the forces

met and the French dismounted and attacked. The attack almost succeeded but Edward was able to counterattack and break the French line. It was a disastrous battle for France, the King of France (Jean II) is captured along with about 2,000 members of the French aristocracy during the initial stages of the battle, and taken back to England. The English demand an enormous ransom for his return--equivalent to about one third of France's GNP. France is paralyzed without a king, and cannot mount an adequate counter-offensive until the 1370s.

(1364) The Battle of Auray:

The battle of Auray centered around control of the duchy of Brittany. English forces under John Chandos besieged the town of Auray. French troops were sent to break the siege. On September 29, 1364 the French counter-attacked. The attack was repulsed and the town surrendered. The leader of the French army, Bertrand du Guesclin, was captured and later ransomed. (1372) French troops regain Poitou and Brittany.

(1372) Battle of La Rochelle. Fierce naval battle. The French regain control of the English Channel, making it impossible for England to ferry reinforcements to Calais.

(1382) The Scots, reinforced and equipped by the French, attack England.

(1389) The Scots sign a truce with England, preventing further French agitation in the north for several years.

(1415) Battle of Harfleur:

Henry V landed in France with about 10,000 men in the summer of 1415. His first objective was Harfleur, a port town on northwestern France. The siege lasted for about a month and Henry marched into the town victorious but with his army severely depleted--mainly from illness. His next stop was to be Calais, but the French army intercepted him at Agincourt.

(1415) Battle of Agincourt.

After the successful siege at Harfleur, Henry marched his force of about 6000 knights, archers and men-at-arms towards Calais. During his march the French army of 20,000 was able to position itself between Henry and Calais. Henry used a narrow front channeled by woodland to give his heavily outnumbered force a chance. The French deployed in three lines. The first line of French knights attacked only to be repulsed by the English longbowmen. The second line attacked and was beaten back, their charge bogged down by the mud on the field. The third line moved to engage but lost heart when they crossed the field covered with French dead; they soon retreated. Henry was left with control of the battlefield and a decisive victory. He soon resumed his march to Calais.

(1421) Battle of Beauge:

Beauge was one of the first defeats for the English during the Hundred Years War. French and Scottish forces combine to raid the English possessions in Normandy. Thomas, the duke of Clarence, (Henry V's brother) attempted to intercept the allied forces. During the interception Thomas' cavalry outdistanced his infantry. The French and Scottish forces decimated the English and Thomas was killed.

(1424) Battle of Verneuil:

In one last attempt to dislodge the English from Normandy, about 15,000 French and Scottish forces attacked the English army of 9,000 commanded by John, duke of Bedford. The attack took place at Verneuil, about 50 miles west of Paris. The French and Scottish forces charged, but the English longbowmen cut them down quickly. About half the of the French/Scottish army were lost; the rest retreated. The result of the battle was that the Scots were removed as a major aid to the French cause.

(1422-1453) War flares again.

The English initially win numerous victories, but the peasant girl Jeanne d'Arc (Joan of Arc) appears, claiming to have had a vision from God. She puts new faith in the French armies and leads them to repeated victories against the English. By 1453, the coast of Calais is the only English possession left in France.

(1428-1429) Siege of Orleans.

The siege of Orleans was the turning point of the Hundred Years' War. After over 80 years of warfare the French finally gained the upper hand with the decisive victory at Orleans. Thomas de Montacute and 5,000 English troops begin the siege of Orleans, the largest fortified position held by Charles of France, on October 23, 1428. William de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, succeeded Montecute in November after he was slain by a cannon ball. The siege lasted months. At around this same time, Joan of Arc appears at the court of Charles. Charles allows Joan to lead a relief force in April. In May, Joan attacks the English in unison with a force from Orleans and she drives the English from their positions. The next day they abandon the siege; military advantage now lies with the French.

(1450) Battle of Formigny:

After French victory at Rouen in October 1449, Charles VII continues the French offensive and presses the English back into the town of Formigny. French artillery blasts away at most of the English army and the English are badly defeated losing more than 4,000 men out of a force of 5,000. Formigny marks the end of the fighting in northern France.

(1453) Battle of Castillon:

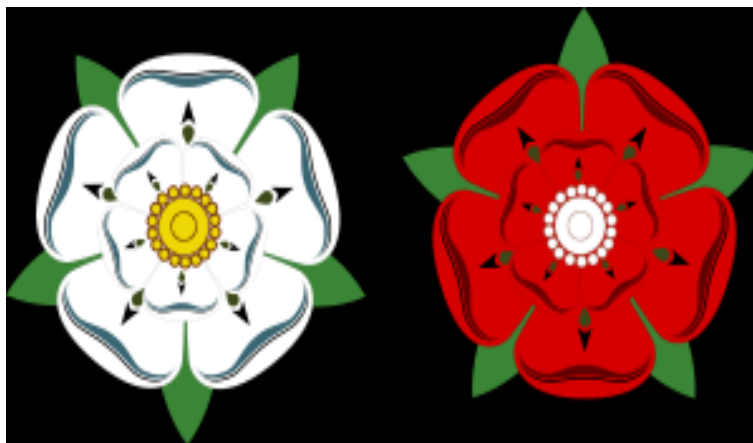
Castillon is the final engagement of the Hundred Years War. After being driven out of

Northern France the previous few years, Henry VI sends a new army to Bordeaux in Southwestern France. He seeks to maintain at least some territory in France. In July 1453 the English forces attack a French force that was besieging the town of Castillon. The attack is repulsed, the English are routed, and Shrewsbury is killed. Bordeaux becomes French territory and the final English survivors sail for home.

So the last battle of the Hundred Years Wars was fought in 1453 and our Dalton's Knight's living at the time was the sons of Sir John Dalton II; Sir Richard b. 1380; Sir John and Sir Robert b. 1386. We have no record of these sons fighting in any wars.

Sir Robert Dalton had a son, Sir Richard, born about 1448 and this Sir Richard had a son, Sir Roger, born about 1469 and who was the last of our medieval Dalton knight's. Were any of these last Dalton's involved in the next set of wars in Northern England about this time called the War of the Roses. Remember that our Dalton's held lands in both Lancashire and Yorkshire at this time.

The Wars of the Roses were a series of civil wars fought in medieval England from 1455 to 1487 between the House of Lancaster and the House of York. The name Wars of the Roses is based on the badges used by the two sides, the red rose for the Lancastrians and the white rose for the Yorkists. Major causes of the conflict include; both houses were direct descendents of king Edward III; the ruling Lancastrian king, Henry VI, surrounded himself with unpopular nobles; the civil unrest of much of the population; the availability of many powerful lords with their own private armies; and the untimely episodes of mental illness by king Henry VI.



The Yorkshire Rose

The Lancashire Rose

Of note is I have no record as yet that Sir Robert Dalton, born about 1386 and his son Sir Richard Dalton, born about 1448 were Knight's, which they probably were, because the son of Sir Richard, being Sir Roger Dalton has a Will in his hand and was proved in the

Prerogative Court of the Archbishop of Canterbury and reads; "In the name of God Amen the tenth day of March in the year of our Lord 1531, I, Roger Dalton, Knight, of sound mind and good memory but sick in body make my will in this form....."

There is a long history that in the landed gentry class of peoples in medieval England that the title of Knighthood was passed along to the oldest son upon the death of the father, so it is reasonable to assume that the above mentioned Sir Robert and his son, Sir Richard were also Knight's.

So there you have my story about our Dalton family Knight's who fought in many wars and survived so i could write about them.

Next is the story about Walter Dalton I:

14- Walter Dalton I; was the first son of Roger Dalton who moved from Lancashire to Oxfordshire and lived in the parish of Witney, He was born in 1552 in the last year of the reign of King Edward VI, he died aged 67 in 1628. He married 3 times. By his wife Margaret, he had 6 children.

During the time the Dalton family lived and worked in Oxfordshire County, some of them become merchants and tradesmen. The books that mentions our Dalton's show them as mercers.

"The word "Mercer" comes from the French word for merchant. In medieval times the Company was at the centre of the commercial life of the City and the development of overseas trade; individual Mercers exported wool and woollen cloth, and imported linen and luxury fabrics such as silk, velvet and cloth.

The trade structure in Witney Parish in 1545 to 1610 lists Walter Dalton as a mercer and haberdasher.

Since the Middle Ages, Witney was famous for the manufacturing of blankets using water from the River Windrush which, so the story goes, was the secret of their quality.

Walter Dalton I, of Curbridge, married (1) Margaret (2) Elizabeth (will) According to some records we have found, Walter I was a merchant by trade and a Ballif and Constablefor the courts of Witney Parish.

From the Witney Parish registers:

When Walter moved to the Witney/Curbridge, Oxfordshire Co. area is unclear, but he shows up in the "Calendar of the Court Books of the Borough of Witney, as follows:

F.248r: Court held 2 Dec. 1586 by Peter Ranckell, bailiff, with Henry Jones, deputy, John Clarke the other bailiff, with the constables, the sergeant of arms and other commoners. Order: by the bailiffs with consent of all the other magistrates above mentioned, that brewers and tipplers to sell indoors ale and beer at a quarter and outdoors a third. On pain of 6d. Collectors for the poor: Walter Dalton and Robert Baker.

F.251v: Court held 6 Oct. 1587 by Thomas Bisshoppe and Roger Wilisheere, bailiff, with the constables, the wardsmen, the sergeant and other bailiffs, Perter Rankckel, Henry Jones, Thomas Clempson, John Collier and many commoners. Constables: Humfrey, Walter Dalton; Wardsmen: Andrew Hodson, Rowland Lacon, Thomas Bramley, Richard Puisley; Cardsmen: Ralph Tackett, Richard Fickett; Leather sealers and searchers: William Gunne, John Wyllye.

F.261r: Court held 17 Jan. 1589 by the bailiffs with the constables, Philip Boxe, Thomas Bisshoppe and divers commoners. It was agreed between Walter Dalton and Richard Shewell that whereas Shewell bought from Dalton the slated penthouse which stands on the street side of Shewell's dwelling house and adjoining the house, Walter Dalton promised to repay the 20s. received if Shewell or his heirs cannot enjoy the penthouse at the end of his lease of the house.
(signed) Walter Dalton.

F.115r: Court action; Subsity men inhabiting within the borough of Witney and there assessment. In land: Thomas Boxe 6 pounds, 13 others. In goods: Walter Dalton 5 pounds, 12 others. Assessers of the above rates: John Clarke.

F.133r: MD a possession; given 11 April 1608 by Henry Rankle of Witney, clothier, by his attorney Walter Dawiton of Witney, mercer, of all his messuage or tenement in Witney on the east side of the High St. between the tenement of Giles Palmer on the north and that of Richard West on the south, with all houses, edifices, buildings, backsides, orchards, gardens and closes thereto belonging and all other things mentioned in the deed dated 5 April to Walter Flude and Francis Bridges of Adderbury to have and to hold according to the meaning of the said deed and as by one letter of attorney made for Rankle to Dawton for the true execution of hereof under his hand and seal, dated 1 April 1608. Witnesses: (signatures of Thomas Yate, bailiff. There are over 30 plus such entries for this Walter. As can seen from these records, Walter Dalton was very involved in the town of Witney government.

The following was copied from the book; Calender of the Court Books of Witney 1538-1610; by The Oxfordshire Record Society.

Page 152 No. f.325r.
Court held on Oct. 19 1597.

"Walter Dawlton of Witney, mercer, bought of Edward Lambard of Burton-on-the Heath; Four calves, one black being an ox calf chopped on the further ear, one red calf with no mark, one black calf under hit on the near ear, one other black calf slit on the near ear, price 40s."

In the introduction of the same book, on page Ixiii; "The Dalton's were 16th, Century Mercers in Witney and London, were wool men"

The following abstract of Walter Dalton's will was taken from the Index Vol. Arch. & Con. Oxford 1516-1732 A- J, Ser. I 1, Vol. 6. No. 40, Will of Walter Dalton, Mercer, 15 Nov 1628:

"1627, 5th of October. 40s to the poore, Mentioned: My son Andrew Dalton ... his brother Edward..his brother Leonard My grandsons, William Creak and George Creak. My daughter Jone Dalton. Elizabeth Dalton, my now wife, Walter Dalton, my grandchild, the son of Walter Dalton."

Witney's History:

Witney is a little market town some twelve miles from the town of Oxford, which was the hub of this whole area. Witney stands on a bend of the river Windrush. At the entrance of the town there was an enormous Norman Arch that our three Walter Dalton's must have passed under, going back and forth from town to town. Further down through the town is a wide old fashion street called "Corn Street" that turns off in a westerly direction, about a half hours walk on this street which turns into a county road, is Curbridge, the little farm village that our Dalton's farmed. To the north of Witney, across the river, lay the forest of Wychwood, an ancient royal forest. It was the privilege of the men of Curbridge and surrounding towns that they should have several days leave to hunt in the forest. But when the "Black Death" became dangerous in 1593, the right was exchanged for a gift of venison. Witney had a population of about 1,800 at the time of the Great Civil War — when the town suffered at the hands of the marauding Royalists.

The bishops of Winchester were Lords of the Manor of Witney since before 1200 AD until the Dukes of Marlborough in the 19th century. These bishops therefore held temporal sway over Witney and Curbridge. They granted charter rights to the town making it the Borough of Witney and established the borough court as a court for civil actions not involving more than 40s (a considerable sum in those days) and for carrying out certain local government functions in the borough. The court was presided over by one or both of two bailiffs elected yearly, who were the principal citizens of the town.

The nearest modern equivalent is perhaps mayor. There was also, as there was for other local courts, a sergeant, or sergeant at mace, who would carry out certain of the orders of the court and act as mace bearer.. Walter Dalton I was elected as a bailiff for the year on the 8th October 1591, on the 7th October 1597 and on the 7th October 1603. A William Dalton was acting as sergeant in 1554 and in 1558. The two court books which are transcribed in the Calendar survived in the possession of the Rector and Vestry of Witney Parish Church until they were deposited by them in the Bodleian Library, Oxford (Calendar p xi).

The country part of the manor, which included Curbridge, outside the borough, came under the jurisdiction of the bishops' manor court held by his steward. This court was concerned mainly with transactions in land. Records of this court with references to the Daltons (Calendar p lxxxviii) have also survived.

So the temporal care of Witney and the rural part of the manor outside the town rested with the bishops of Winchester. But spiritually they were within the diocese of Lincoln until 1542 and under the care of the bishops of Lincoln. In that year the Oxford archdeaconry was removed from Lincoln diocese to form the diocese of Oxford with its own bishops.

The little settlement of Curbridge, a few miles west of Witney, in the sixteen century was a little group of farms, a village alehouse and a forge. There was also an area called Curbridge Downs where races were held. To the south were thousands of acres of common lands, a paradise for wild fowl and game. To the northwest on the main road was the town of Burford. The towns of Witney, Curbridge and Burford were on the main route from London to South Wales. The Dalton's of Witney and Curbridge must have conformed to whatever the ruling powers of the day required.

The town of Witney had three tribulations in the sixteen century when our Dalton's lived there. The first was the plague followed by famine and then economic distress.

World famous for the manufacture of blankets, especially in North America where the Witney Point blankets were traded in exchange for furs, the town owes its prosperity to the wool trade.

The place name means "Witta's Island" and was important as the Council of Saxon Kings met here, this was known as the Wittan. It then developed under the patronage of the Bishop of Winchester who built his palace here, and the ruins can still be seen today.

he huge triangle of Church Green was originally laid out as the first medieval market place and from that time on wool was linked to the town's fortunes. The weaving industry built up with several families expanding their operations including Earlys,

which has a factory operating today

The Parish Church of St. Mary's, Witney was founded in 1243 and the Bishop of Winchester had his Palace nearby. It was this fact and the affluence of the wool merchants in the Middle Ages, which resulted in the very large building. The dominant spire may be seen for miles around.

Walter Dalton is probably buried in the Church yard of St. Mary's in Witney.

15- Walter Dalton II; was the son of Walter I of Curbridge aforesaid, Gent, and was born in 1582 and died, aged 68 in 1650 leaving issue by Elizabeth his 2nd, wife:

1. Walter III, born 1603, Curbridge.
2. Charles, born 1605, Curbridge.
3. Elizabeth, born 1609, Curbridge, died unmarried.
4. Thomas, born 1611, Curbridge,
5. William, born 1614, Curbridge.
6. Andrew, born 1616, Curbridge, married Rebecca Skinner of Witney, 21st Oct 1639.
7. Johanna, born 1618, Curbridge, married J. Hoskyns.

In the Oxfordshire Probate Records it lists; Walter Dalton Jr. Innkeeper, 1628.

During the civil wars of the reign of Charles 1, the king was largely dependent on voluntary resources. This was forthcoming in generous measure. It took the form of raising and supporting bodies of troops by members of the nobility and gentry according to their means. Lord Molyneux and his brother raised two regiments; Lord Belasyee six; Sir Charles Lucas brought 2,000 horses; the Earl of Sunderland -15,000 and 1200 men. On this honoured roll occurs the name of Col. Thomas Dalton (of Thurnham), the commander of "Dalton's Regiment." The troop, which included our Walter Dalton II and several of his sons and a variety of cousins, was entirely equipped at its own expense.

Notes about the Cavalry unit that Col. Thomas Dalton put together for this second battle of Newbury:

Cavalry regiments were about 400 men strong, although there was much variety between regiments. These would have been divided into six troops of 60-70 men each. Cavalry troopers usually wore armor in the form of back and breastplates, and a pot helmet. Often a buff coat would be worn underneath this, and some kind of thigh protection - perhaps just long leather boots.

Some regiments wore heavier armor, such as Haselrigg's Lobsters who wore full plate. This was expensive and hot, so it was limited to a select few.

Cavalry weapons consisted of a couple of pistols, and perhaps a carbine, plus a sword or cutlass. The pistols would probably be fired only once in the battle, since they were difficult to reload.

During the English Civil Wars, the cavalry tended to fight their own battle. Only when the opposing cavalry had been driven off would the remainder turn and help their infantry. In fact, the royalists were notorious for pursuing a beaten cavalry force for miles, leaving the infantry unprotected on the battlefield. Once the pistols were fired, cavalry were very ineffective against infantry with pike support. Casualties amongst horses were severe, and several troopers got through two or three horses in a single battle.

The story of the last of the Walter Dalton's is told next.

The History of Walter Dalton III, 1603 - 1666

The third of our Walter Dalton's was mentioned in the following book; Clarendon states that the commons at Oxford were required to obtain lists of "gentlemen of estate and other persons who were reputed to be rich," and letters were written to them individually asking for contributions proportionate to their ability. "By this means there was a sum raised ... near the sum of one hundred thousand pounds, whereof some came in every day." Those who contributed plate had it melted down and minted at the Mint established for that purpose at Oxford.

Dalton family tradition says "the money received for the sale of Curbridge, was given into his Majesty's own hand by Walter Dalton III in a long leathern purse, at the top of the stairs at Christchurch, Oxford." The splendid Hall of Christchurch, "magnificent alike in its proportions and its decorations" is reached by a great stairway in several flights. At the top of the stairs we stand under a ceiling decorated with elaborate fan-tracery, dated 1640. On this spot the King must have stood on emerging from the Hall to receive the purse.

Walter Dalton III, in the midst of the English Civil War:

When civil war erupted in England in 1642, it quickly involved every level of society throughout the British Isles. On one side the King and his supporters fought for traditional government in Church and State. On the other, the supporters of Parliament sought radical changes in religion and economic policy, and a greater share of power at the national level. No one could be neutral, but family was divided against family, and town against town. Oxford became the Headquarters of the Royalists and the whole of

the surrounding area suffered equally. Banbury castle was a Puritan stronghold for the other side.

The Civil War and its aftermath proved somewhat of a disaster for the Dalton Family. The Senior Thurnham Line lost Colonel Thomas Dalton (who died of wounds) at the second Battle of Newbury in 1644. John Dalton of the Yorkshire branch died of wounds in the same year. The Irish Dalton's of County Westmeath were broken as "territorial magnates by the Cromwellian devastation's". Perhaps, however, the Junior Thurnham Line paid the highest price in the Dalton support of the Royalist cause. The main calamity, which befell this branch of the family, is associated with the Battle of Worcester in 1651 and its consequences.

Witney's townspeople certainly were familiar with the sight of troops of both sides, though Witney, Curbridge and Burford were not places of actual battles. The army of Royalists was quartered at both places, sometimes with the King in Person.

Our Walter Dalton was right in the middle of all this action. Because of the uncertainty of who would win the war, Walter who was on the Royalist side, decided to sell his land in Curbridge in case the King lost. "The family tradition" says that Walter Dalton gave the money received for the sale into the King's own hand, in a long leather purse at the top of the stairs at Christ Church in Oxford. The land bought in South Wales with the residue still continues in the family.

We now come to the battle of "Worcester" 9 years after the Second Battle of Newbury where many of the Dalton's met with terrible defeat. There is also a reason to believe that the events at Worcester played a large part in our Dalton's survival in South Wales. After the battle of Worcester, it must have been painful and was indeed difficult for Walter to collect his family and goods and journey to the west with them. Curbridge was sold, and the winter lay before him. The King had fled, disguised as the servant of John Ashburnham, who's family would play a large part in the Dalton history later on in South Wales. As with the towns, and the countryside, farms lay desolate and all the homesteads wrecked and dismantled, barns were empty and ruinous.

After the battle of Worcester, Walter Dalton fled to the Kidwelly area of South Wales. He moved from Witney, Oxfordshire, England in the winter of 1651 or early 1652. The Civil War and its aftermath proved somewhat of a disaster for the Dalton Family. The Junior Thurnham Line paid the highest price in the Dalton support of the Royalist cause. The main calamity, which befell this branch of the family, is associated with the Battle of Worcester in 1651 and its consequences. Walter Dalton (1603-1666) the head of the Junior Dalton Line, played an active part in the Civil War. He fought at Newbury in the regiment of his cousin Colonel Dalton. Not deterred by Cromwell's victory and the death of the King, he joined the invading Scottish army lead by Charles II. A family

tradition is that either he was the paymaster of the Army or he was associated with that office. With Walter went his younger brothers Charles (1605-1651) and William (1614-1651), together with other relations and friends. The Scots and their supporters proved no match for the military genius of Cromwell and the Royalist army was routed at the Battle of Worcester in September 1651. The fight was an exceedingly bloody business even for the Civil war and many Royalists were killed including both Walter's brothers, Charles and William. According to one source "at this battle there were ten Dalton brothers, cousins and uncles killed.". According to a verbal family tradition, Walter and a relation, Rowland escaped from the field, laden with the royal pay chest. He hastily collected his wife and young children to make a get away to South Wales. The journey lasted into the winter and the conditions were so harsh that three of Walter's children died - Thomas aged 8, Ormonde aged 6 and Walter aged 3. The youngest child, James, age of one, survived and became the ancestor of the Junior Dalton Line and the American Dalton's of Utah. Charles, the oldest son also survived the journey. Walter and his surviving family settled down at Kidwelly before moving on to Pembrey. His financial position appears to have been satisfactory and he sent his son James to the Inns of Court in London where he qualified as a barrister-at-law. James, probably through both the Vaughan and Dalton connections, acquired the post of Receiver for the Duchy of Lancaster, which was held in turn by his eldest son John. Another son Richard became Sheriff. It is obvious that the Civil war had a rather devastating effect on Walter and his family. The number of male Dalton's was drastically reduced and the young James chances of survival could not have been rated high in the hard winter of 1651. Yet the family adapted itself, survived and then rebuilt both its numbers and its socio-economic position - quite a remarkable feat in a troubled period of English history.

One interesting point is the identity of the Rowland who escaped from Worcester with Walter. He was Rowland Vaughan, one of the the cousins of the Vaughan's of Garden Grove, Carmarthenshire, Wales. It was in the Vaughan area of South Wales that Walter fled and in the course of time Walter's son James married Rowland Vaughan's daughter, Joyce.



Drawing of Kidwelly Castle

Copy of Walter Dalton III Will:

Walter Dalton, Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, Wales, Gentleman

Date of Will: 12- 3- 1666

Probate Date: 5 - 26 - 1666

Walter Dalton of Penbre Parish, by his will dated 12 Mar. 1666, proved 25 May 1666, & witnessed by Richard Brown & Robert Fisher, of Kidwelly, gave to St. Davids Cathedral 4d to the poor of Penbre parish 4 bushels of barley: to his niece Mary Hoskins, some cattle on the lower Burrows, a silver beaker &: to his nephew Walter Hoskins some cattle on the Lower Burrows, and to the same Mary & Walter, some more cattle that were relicts left of their fathers goods after his debts were paid," to be equally divided between them. To his nephew John Hoskins all the standards and household stuff in the house at Kidwely where William Philip liveth, and also "my black horse" To Mary the daughter of "my brother in law" Thos Richard, one sheep: To Margaret Fisher da of Robert Fisher of Kidwely, one sheep. To Robert Fisher younger son of Rob Fisher, a 2 year-old mare. To Davis Thomas "my servant" 1 bushel of Barley & 1 Bushel of oats, or 10/- in cash; To David Jenkins my servant 5 /- To "my daughter Joan" some cattle, a cedar plank, 2 silver spones, a feather-bed and 30p when she attains the age of 18years. To my son James Dalton all the stock on the Court lands, other cattle & corn. To my

loving wife Jane Dalton and our son Charles Dalton, all my lands, tenements & houses, between for her life, and afterwards to Charles. They were also appointed residuary legates and joint Executors. Should one of the other 3 children die before marriage his or her share to be equally divided between surviving two. Wife Jane to be tutrix & guardian over Joan Dalton & Mary and Walter Hoskins during their minority.

(signed) Walter Dalton

Charles Dalton --	William Dalton	James Dalton
John Dalton	Rich Dalton	Edw Dalton

People , people mentioned;
Cathedral Church of St. Davids
Poor of Pembrey

Executer: Jane Dalton - wife, Charles Dalton - son
Witnesses: Richard Browne, Robert Fisher

17- James Dalton; was the son of Walter III was born in 1650 in Whitney Parish, Oxford, England. He died at aged 71 in 1721 leaving issue by Joyce, his wife, who died 14 Mar 1731, aged 84, both being buried at Pembrey.

Children of James Dalton and Joyce Vaughan:

1. John, of Pembrey.
2. James Ormonde, of Gillyvychan, Esq., who married Ayliffe, daughter of John Edwards, Esq., of Rhydygors and left issue.
(Note: His son James married Mary Bonvill, and whose son Thomas Dalton came to America sometime between 1750 and 1760)
3. Charles, of Court, died single.
4. Richard, Attorney at Law and Sheriff in 1729.
5. Margaret, married Anthony Morris.
6. Edward, Collector of Llanelly, had issue, John born 1706, Mary born 1707, Joyce born 1709, Margaret born 1711, Thomas born 1714, Anne born 1715, Edward born 1717, of Pool House, died 14 Nov 1808 aged 91 years 6 months. Richard born 1719, and George born 1720. The last two both died young.
7. Thomas in Holy Orders, died single.

The history of James Dalton, 1650-1721:

James Dalton, the fifth child of Walter Dalton III, and Jane Needham was born in Curbridge, a little village just west of Witney, Oxfordshire England. James had 9 brothers and sisters. James Dalton was only 1 year old when his father had to pack up

and leave the Witney area after the defeat of the Royalist forces at the Battle of Worcester in Sept. of 1651.

In the Bishop's transcripts of the time lists this note: 1721 Jacobus Dalton, Gent nono die Maji sepult.

Explication of the bishop's Transcripts;

A bishop's diocese comprised parishes. Many parishes were villages with a church and a clergyman. Larger towns and cities would contain several parishes. Records of British baptisms, marriages and burials have been maintained by law since 1538. Not all churches date back to 16th century and not all clergymen kept proper records in the early years. The early baptism, marriage and burial records were usually jumbled together and some of them were written in Latin but by 1732 all registers were required to be written in English. During 18th century the baptisms, marriages and burials were maintained in separate registers or on separate pages. For the first 200 years it was normal to record only the father's full name and that of his child in baptismal entries so proving ancestry for a popular surname is often difficult. Most original parish registers are today in CROs but some are still in churches. From 1598 the clergy had to send a copy of their entire year's parish register to the local bishop. These copy entries are known as the Bishops' Transcripts.

The Will of James Dalton, dated Oct. 7th, 1727. Proved Oct. 21 1721.

"James Dalton of Penbre, by his last Will dated 7th, Oct. 1721, proved 21 Oct 1721, and witnessed by Griffith Jones, Cleric, James Beven and Anthony Morris. Gave to the poor of Penbre, 20 dozen wheaten loaves at a penny each. To St. David's Cathedral 6p. To his son James Dalton 50p. To his son Charles Dalton 6p. To each of his sons Richard, Edward, and Thomas 20/- To his daughter Margaret 20/-. To each of his grandchildren 20/-. All the rest of the estate he gave between his wife Joyce and his eldest son John, whom he appointed joint Executors. But on the 19th Oct. 1721, Joyce for 180p paid her, renounced he the executorship and also all her title to the estate in favour of John Dalton."

James Dalton is buried in the court yard of the Illtyd Church of St. Davids in Pembrey village.

The History of Pembrey Court or Court farm, Pembrey:

On a slope overlooking the western approach to the Village of Pembrey was Court Farm. This manor was held by the Butler family as early as 1361, and remained in their hands until the early part of the 16th Century when it passed by the marriage of the Butler

heiress, to the family of Vaughan of Bredwardine and Dunraven.

Our Dalton family has a long history with this farm and Manor, having been tennets and Estates Agents for the Lord Ashburnham family. We can believe that some of our Dalton members actually lived in part of this very large Manor house.

Walter Vaughan of Pembrey Court was High Sheriff in 1557, and his son Thomas served the same office in 1566 and 1570. The Vaughans in due course ended without male heirs and the mansion and estate came to Bridget Vaughan, sole heiress, who married John Ashburnham of Sussex in 1677, and thereafter remained in her Ashburnham descendants. Ashburnham made a tour of his wife's extensive Welsh estates in 1687, and noted in his journal that he had seen Pembrey House, which is an old stone house, large enough, and kept in pretty good repair. Two years later he was raised to the peerage as Baron Ashburnham. The third Baron was advanced to the dignity of Earl of Ashburnham in 1730.

The original caput of the manor of Pembrey was probably the mound castle now called 'the Twmpath' which is located about a mile and a half to the north-east of Burry Port Station. This tumulus is 100 feet in diameter, with a ditch about 12 feet wide and about 5 feet deep surrounding it.

The Twmpath has extensive views, but at some stage it became inconvenient and the caput of the manor was relocated to the site of the present Pembrey Court (Pen + bre meaning the top or end of a hill). The manor house is also known locally as Court Farm or simply Court or, in Welsh, as Cwrt Penbre or Cwrt-y-dre. This location is about half a mile north of the church of Pembrey, next to the present Mountain Road that climbs up towards Penllwyn Uchaf and the uplands of Mynydd Penbre (Pembrey Mountain). However, Pembrey Court was originally approached by means of the Ffordd Fawr (the Big Road) which now forms the public footpath immediately below the house and which exits at Danlan Road, Pembrey.

A knight's service to his lord consisted of: aids, relief, wardship, marriage and escheat and some of these feudal obligations were recorded at the Court of Foreignry, held at Kidwelly, where the jurors returned that:

The manor of Pembrey was held under the lord of Kidwelly by military service of one knight's fee; John Boteler was to do suit of court monthly 'at the Court of Foreignry of Kedewelly'; the lord of Kidwelly was to have wardship and marriage; in time of war John Boteler was to provide five archers to follow the lord so far as the limit of the 'Patrie' (ie the lordship) for one day according to custom; tenants were to pay 10 shillings to the lord by the hands of the Beadle of Penrhyn; and the nativi were to give a day's ploughing to the lord at 2 pence and 1 penny for food, and to help with the hay for

one day.

Near Pembrey Court is an open strip of land locally known as the Llathed Fain, or Narrow Yard. There are three such fields in the parish of Pembrey, and two on Court land. The one near the house is one furlong long by one chain (220 yards) wide and was granted or leased by the lord of the manor to a favoured yeoman or servant, who marked-out his new territory with a hedge. The John Butler lineage and its extinction with Anne Butler:

The Butlers favoured the Christian name John and no less than six John Butlers succeeded each other to the Pembrey and Dunraven estates.

Members of the Butler family married into other key Norman families in south Wales, including the de Londres, de la Bere, Tuberville and Cantelupe families.

The Butler link with Pembrey Court ended when Anne Butler, daughter of John Butler and Jane Basset of Beaupre, in Glamorgan, married Sir Richard Vaughan who became Sheriff of Bredwardine in Herefordshire (originally Breconshire) in 1530, and who was a descendent of the illustrious Moreiddig Warwyn, Lord of Brycheiniog.

After the marriage, Sir Richard went to live with his wife at Dunraven Castle where their son, Walter, was born in 1500.

"Here lies the body of James Dalton of Caldicote Farm in this Parish, Gent. who departed this life on the 15th day of May, Anno Domini, 1721, age 71 years, son of Walter Dalton of the Parish of Whitney, in the county of Oxford."

In Burke's Dictionary of Landed Gentry", 1848, under the heading "Dalton of Dunkirk House"

There is a note by Edward Dalton that states;

"This is a branch of the family of the name of Thurnham Hall, Lancashire, resident for several generations at Curbridge, in the parish of Witney, Oxfordshire, whence Walter Dalton, with his sons, joined his chief, Col. Thomas Dalton, who raised a regiment to assist King Charles. They suffered severely at Newbury, in 1644. Col. Dalton died of his wounds at Marlborough. Walter Dalton, the younger escaped to Wales after the battle of Worcester in Sept. of 1651, where he purchased lands near Kidwelly.



St. Illtyd Church in Pembrey village

Pembrey in the 1700's only had about 20 houses, and most of these were farms, Pembrey today is still a small place, the old Church is still standing and there are 3 public houses, one paper shop, one small store, and that is all.

The story of how James Dalton became a Barrister-at-law:

For any man to become a barrister, it was necessary for him to begin as a student at one of the “Inn’s of Court” in London. These four ancient Societies were named; Lincoln’s Inn, Gray’s Inn, The Inner Inn, and the Middle Temple, respectively in the seventeenth Century and a candidate had to either pass a general examination, or produce evidence of having done so at one of the Universities.

What a day it must have been for our James Dalton when he had his first sight of London. He had never seen any city larger than Carmarthen, but he must have heard of the great school at Oxford in his old hometown in Oxfordshire from his father. Our James must have attended one of these Inn’s, probably Gray’s Inn because there had been a few of his Dalton ancestor’s that had attended Gray’s in the past. After James received his degree he returned to Pembrey and as luck would have it, he was named as

the Receiver of the Duchy of Lancaster. The Duchy of Lancaster was originally created to provide an income for John the Gaunt. The Duchy owned land in many parts of England and Wales. Did James' marrying into the famous Vaughan family help him to secure this lucrative position. It did help him to acquire a sufficient income to bring up six sons and one daughter. James Dalton lived to the age of 71, and he left seven children:

John Dalton, born 1677.

James Ormande Dalton, born 1769.

Charles Dalton, born 1682.

Richard Dalton, born 1683.

Edward Dalton, born 1685.

Thomas Dalton, born 1688

Margaret Dalton, born 1691.

These children were all born at Caldicot House in an area on the coast of which was quite barren, with little woodland, The sandy common affording grazing land, occasionally overflowed on it's lower reaches, but higher and healthier than the little town of Llanelli, a few miles along the coast. From the positions which they afterward filled, it is evident that there was no difficulty about their education, and their parents had done a good job in showing them on how to better there lives by setting an example for them.

When their father died he had lived through six different rulers of the Realm, the Commonwealth and two dynasties, and all of his offspring had established themselves in homes and careers of their own, and old James Dalton had as many as 17 grandchildren around him.

James Dalton, who was lucky to have survived the winter of 1651 as a one year old, lived a long and rich life in South Wales. James Dalton died before Oct. 21st, 1721 when his will was probated. He is buried in the Churchyard in Pembrey.

Here is James Dalton's will:

The Will of James Dalton, dated Oct. 7th, 1721. Proved Oct. 21 1721.

"James Dalton of Penbre, by his last Will dated 7th, Oct. 1721, proved 21 Oct 1721, and witnessed by Griffith Jones, Cleric, James Beven and Anthony Morris. Gave to the poor of Penbre, 20 dozen wheaten loaves at a penny each. To St. David's Cathedral 6p. To his son James Dalton 50p. To his son Charles Dalton 6p. To each of his sons Richard, Edward, and Thomas 20/- To his daughter Margaret 20/-. To each of his grandchildren 20/-. All the rest of the estate he gave between his wife Joyce and his eldest son John,

whom he appointed joint Executors. But on the 19th Oct. 1721, Joyce for 180p paid her, renounced he executorship and also all her title to the estate in favour of John Dalton."

Poor of Pembrey parish
Cathedral Church of St. Davids

James Dalton - son
Richard Dalton - son
Edward Dalton - son
Thomas Dalton - son
Charles Dalton - son
Margaret Morris - Daughter
Names not given - grandchildren
Joyce Dalton - Wife
John Dalton – Son

Executors: Joyce Dalton - Wife, John Dalton - Son
Witnesses: Griffith Jones, clerk, James Beven, Anthony Morris.

18- James Ormande Dalton; was the son of James and Joyce Vaughan was born in 1678/1679 in Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, Wales. He died in 1761. He married Ayliffe Edwards.

Note: The Dalton Brothers, John and James Ormande were Estate agents of the Ashburnham Pembrey Estate.

Note: The Dalton Brothers, John and James Ormande were Estate agents of the Ashburnham Pembrey Estate.

THE ASHBURNHAM CANAL:

Coal has been mined on the western slopes of Pembrey mountain, facing the Pinged hamlet, for a very long time. Two of its main sources were Coed Rhial (Royal Wood) and Coed Marchog (Knight's Wood); both woods have an ancient association with the Manorial lands of Pembrey Court, which was part of the Norman Lordship of Kidwelly. The coal was mined from a variety of outlets, including bell pits, adit mines, levels and slants, particularly from Coed Rhial.

It is worth noting here that Coed Marchog (rear of Butchers Arms) off the Pinged road is overlooked by the precipitous craggy western face of the famous Garreg Lwyd (Grey Rock). This was a traditional pilgrimage site for local children on Good Friday, for the twin purposes of sliding on the long smooth rock and to gather bunches of blue-bells

from the adjacent hill. The rock is known to have been a prehistoric defensive settlement. A fierce fire during the prolonged hot summer of 1976 (which destroyed the Forestry Commission conifers and also the undergrowth on the rock hill) exposed some interesting defensive features. Excavations by the Dyfed Archaeological Trust in 1977 indicated that it was a settlement and that there were some "finds" of at least the "Early Iron Age".

A section of the 1796-1818 Canal, from Pinged Road to Ty Mawr. Although overgrown, the canal is still well defined and the original towpath is now a public footpath. Details of all coal exports between 1714 and 1721 have been recorded in a ledger by the brothers John and James Dalton, who were then joint estate agents of the Ashburnham Pembrey Estate. All the coal was carried by pack horses, and continued to be so carried for many years afterwards, from Coed Rhial and Coed Marchog and other nearby mines, to the Gwendraeth Fawr river estuary for export in small sailing ships. The vessels carried the coal to ports in Devon, Cornwall, Ireland and France. Towards the end of the 1700s, Lord Ashburnham (2nd Earl 1724-1812) perhaps enviously inspired by the success of Kymer's Canal, from Kidwelly to Carway, decided to build a canal from near the coal mines to the Gwendraeth estuary. The canal would enable a far greater amount of coal to be shipped, and would allow Lord Ashburnham to dispense with the slow and costly pack horses and their owners, known as hauliers. All the hauliers fiercely opposed the plan, as they realised that they would lose their livelihood, but in spite of their opposition the building of the canal began in 1796. It started from a field near Waunca-Philip, below Coed Farm, off the Pinged to Pembrey road, and continued towards Ty Mawr Farm, then across Pinged Marsh (present R.A.F. and Motor Sport area) and, by 1801, ended at Pill Tywyn on the river estuary. Two shipping places and a dry dock had been built there by 1817. In 1805, a branch canal of 300 to 400 yards to the Ffrwd Farm was added. The canal was 1 ½ miles long with no locks, it cost and the size of its barges are unknown. During the canal's "life", there was no railway (1852) nor main road (1850) to cross, but several agricultural access bridges were built across the canal. It was not used after 1818, as the mines had become exhausted.

The Will of James Ormande Dalton 1679 - 1761

JAMES DALTON SENIOR - LLANELLY CARMS GENTLEMAN - 1761

Date of will: 13 Nov 1759 Probate date: 28 July 1761

Codicil dated 1 Feb 1760

People Property mentioned:

Arthur Bevan - Lessee

John Phillips - Lessee Esq

John Lewis - Lessee Gent

Thomas Edwards - Lessee Gent

James Dalton junior - son-in-law Gentleman
Lettice daughter, wife of James Dalton junior
Griffith Roberts - Mortgagee
Mrs Ann Thomas - Tenant widow prop mentioned: Llettyrffonen Pembrey
Mary Dalton - granddaughter, minor
Ayliff Dalton granddaughter, minor
Margarett Dalton g/dau minor
Thomas Dalton - g/son minor
John Dalton
Edward Dalton debtor/mortgagee Aberlogin tenant, Glam
Four youngest g-daughters

Exec: Thomas Bevan, William Bonville, James Dalton son in law
Witnesses: Benj Allen, Edward Dalton collier, Edward Dalton jnr.

Indenture 11 Jan 1737. Signed 4 Jan 1737 with testator as lessor 13 Oct 1755, 2 Jun 1758.

Codicil signed by Edward Dalton collier, and Edward Dalton junior.

James O. Dalton is buried at St. Elli church in Llanelly.

19- James Dalton; was the son of James was born on 23 June, 1713 in Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, , Wales. He died in 1766 at Llettyrychen farm, Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, Wales. He married Mary Bonville about 1731 in Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, Wales.

James and Mary had three children:

- 1- Thomas Dalton - born: 1731, Pembrey, Wales
- 2- Mary Dalton - born: about 1733, Pembrey, Wales
- 3- Elizabeth Thomas – buried Nov. 3 1729

Of note about the above Elizabeth Thomas; In the book, “Pembrey Parish Church Resisters “ Selected Entries from 1701 to 1900 by John A. Nicholson there is the following entry on page 6. This under the heading of Burials 1701 – 1771:

1729, Nov. 3, Elizabeth Thomas, illegitimate daughter of James Dalton of Llettyrychen, so it is said.

Source: Rodney Dalton picked up this copy of the above booklet at the St. Illtyd Church of Pembrey after attending Sunday services there on May 31, 2003.

So here again is an official entry in a parish record of James Dalton, father of our Thomas, with another illegitimate child. This Elizabeth must have died as an infant.

From the Vestry Books – Pembrey:

1746 - Witnesses mentioned in the vestry books were Hector Rees, James Dalton, John Rees and John Bonville. Also William Bonville - Surveyor. Pembrey, Carmarthanshire, Wales.

We don't know much about James Dalton nor his wife, Mary Bonvill. We do know by the records he lived and died on a farm named Llettyrychen farm. This farm must have been where his son Thomas was born and raised.

In a book by Frances Jones, he shows a John Bonvill as being the owner of "Lletter-y-chen" the farm where Mary's husband James Dalton lived. This John Bonvill must be Mary's father.

James Dalton died on February 13, 1766 on his farm named " Lleth-er-ychen.

"Now a farm called Llettrychen, on high ground north of Dyfatty; the local pronunciation is sometimes "Llandrichen"

James Dalton and Mary Bonvill had three children and the first one, a son was named Thomas Dalton.

20- Thomas Dalton; was born on November 25th 1731 in Pembrey, Carmarthenshire Co. Wales, and was the only son of James Dalton and Mary Bonvill. (Pembrey (Pembrey), a parish in the hundred of Kidwelly, County of Carmarthen, South Wales, 5 miles from Kidwelly. The name of this place, literally the head of a hill or promontory, is derived from its situation at the extremity of a mountainous ridge, beyond which extends into the Bay of Carmarthen.

This man, Thomas is the first of our Dalton family to come to America about 1757-60. We don't know the circumstances why he come to America, but there are a few theories on that subject.

We finally have information on our Thomas Dalton was born illegitimate in 1731. The source of this information was; Pauline and Richard James, of the Carmarthenshire Family History Society in Llanelli, South Wales. The information was found in the Parish Registers of Carmarthenshire County, Wales. It has been rumored that our Thomas Dalton was born illegitimate ever since Helen Snelgrove of Orem, Utah visited South Wales in 1995 and was showed this record on our Thomas by the parish priest in

Pembrey.

We now must assume by knowing of this new record, that Thomas Dalton was given the name of Dalton by his father and not his mother, because of the embarrassment of being born out of wedlock. Usually the mother gives the child her name and they are not heard of again, except of by the father.

In Thomas case I believe that he was named Dalton and lived with the Dalton family, unknown by others that his mother was not Mary Bonvill! Or was she not. The Church in Wales at this time condemned all births out of wedlock and set to punish those who did. Therefore the Bishop in the record entered "illegitimate"

We will never know for sure, but we do know that we are lucky he was named Dalton, or our roots in America would be lost.

Note: Before we go any further with the history of our Thomas Dalton, let's look at the following information from the "John Dalton Book of Genealogy" by Mark A. Dalton: 1964. (This book is the Utah Dalton Family bible) Some of the information in this book was from the genealogy collected by John Luther Dalton., while he was on a mission to England, from April, 1863 until 1866. He also went back to England for more genealogical research in 1888. He searched histories, deeds, wills, cemetery records, etc.

Listed on page 20 of the John Dalton Book:

The Genealogy Record of John Luther Dalton: "Thomas Dalton, our emigrant from England to America. He married Polly.

John Dalton, their son, was born Jan. 2, 1763, at Conico or Carico Jiggs, Northumberland, County, Virginia."

Listed on page 27 of the John Dalton Book, #21: (which was copied from John Luther Dalton's notes.

"Thomas Dalton, born Pembrey, Carmarthen, Wales, our emigrant to America. He married Polly from Ireland.

Children of Thomas Dalton, christened 7 May 1732, wife Polly.

- 1- John Dalton, born 1763, Conico Jiggs or Connaco Chique, Northumberland County, Virginia.
- 2- James Dalton, born 1765
- 3- Charles Dalton, born 1767
- 4- Polly Dalton, born 1769

The real story is below;

Thomas Dalton, who was christened on 7 May 1732, Pembrey, Carmarthenshire. Wales, or England. He was our immigrant to America. He married Betsy or Polly from Ireland and had four children. The first was John Dalton Sr. The other 2 sons we know nothing about.

Thomas Dalton settled down somewhere around the Conococheaque Creek Valley that starts in the present day Franklin County Pennsylvania and runs south through the present day Washington County Maryland. There is a small creek that flows through this valley named Conococheaque Creek. This creek zig zags its way south until eventually It empties into the Potomac River in Maryland.

So lets continue with our history of Thomas Dalton.

Thomas Dalton was probably shipped to America as an Indentured Convict, in Sept. of 1757 to do service for one of the English Plantation owners. He probably sailed around the Southern tip of Virginia and up the Chesapeake Bay to a port somewhere near Baltimore, Maryland. Annapolis Maryland was at this time the number one port receiving Transported Convicts.

One of the largest English Plantations in Maryland belonged to Lord Baltimore. Sometime after Thomas landed in American he met and married a Polly/Betsy from Ireland. Their first child born in American was John Dalton, born in 1763, Conococheaque, Frederick County, Maryland. Their other children were: James, born 1765, Charles, born 1767, and Polly, born 1769.

Note: The Calvert's ruled with the force of kings as the Lords Baltimore (there were six) from 1637, when the English King granted Cecilius Calvert dominion over Maryland until 1775. All the land was owned by the Calvert's and granted, which meant in effect leased, by their authority as owners to individual proprietors in blocks of 1,000 acres or more to form Manors and Estates, in return for rent paid to the Calvert's. One reference said that one of the Calvert's manors in Maryland was of 10,000 acres and up on being forfeit to the United States after the Revolution, was parceled out to the War veterans as bounty land in payment for their services. Was this how our Thomas Dalton got his land in Maryland?

Next we find Thomas Dalton as a private in the American Revolutionary War, He enlisted on Apr. 1, 1777 in Captain Jacob Wright's company in Colonel Philip Cortland's Second New York Regiment. Thomas Dalton was wounded in his right knee at Stillwater, Bemis Height's N.Y. Sept. 1777.

Thomas Dalton was transferred to the Corps of Invalids Regiment of the Continental Line, Third Regiment of N.Y. May 15 1780. Thomas's pay was \$6.60 per month.

Thomas was discharged by George Washington, Sept. 1, 1782. Thomas Dalton died somewhere in New York State on Jan. 2, 1791. (Death date needs more research)

Note: Here is a short history of The American Revolutionary War:

The American Revolutionary War began on April 19, 1775 when British soldiers and American patriots clashed at Lexington, Mass., and at nearby Concord. The American Revolutionary War led to the birth of a new nation-the United States of America. The war lasted for eight years. On April 19, 1775, the first battle of the American Revolutionary War took place, when blood was shed at Lexington, Mass. At this battle, an outburst of shots fired. It is not known who fired the shots or which side they came from, both sides blame each other. The battle of Lexington was only the beginning of the war. There were many other battles that took place between the American Minutemen and the British Regulars.

The two armies marched on the Battle of Bunker Hill. On June 17 the Battle of Bunker Hill began. The British on one side the Americans on the other. Many were injured and some were killed, but in the end, the British army walked away with the victory. They had taken over Bunker Hill.

On July 4, 1776, the Declaration of Independence was adopted. On December 26, the day after Christmas, George Washington made a surprise attack on the British soldiers. This battle took place at Trenton. The war went on.

The Americans were beginning to weigh down the British army. On October 7, 1777, Burgoyne surrendered at Saratoga. This was considered the turning point in the war because France and Spain had entered against the British. Then on the 19th of December, Washington's army retired to winter quarters at Valley Forge. This was a time of hardship and much endurance.

On February 6, 1778, the United States and France signed an alliance. The Americans and the British signed a treaty in Paris on September 3, 1783. The Americans had won the Revolutionary War.

Notes: From research by Arthur Whittaker: Thomas Dalton was born in 1732 in Wales. I received information and documentation from Helen Snelgrove that Thomas Dalton was born illegitimate in Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, Wales. He was the son of James Dalton. Helen visited the Parish in Pembrey and obtained the copy of the birth certificate

which she gave me a copy in 1987. She states that the parish minister showed her a translated transcript of this entry. Maybe this is why he immigrated to America. If it was we can all be thankful for this event. My how such things change the events of many generations for the good and the bad. This information is also on Pembrey, Carmathenshire, Wales film #105195.

Here is the research that Mark A. Dalton "The John Dalton Book of Genealogy" found. Thomas Dalton of the colony and state of New York

REVOLUTIONARY WAR - GENERAL SERVICE ADMINISTRATION, NATIONAL ARCHIVES AND RECORDS SERVICE, WASHINGTON, D.C. Captain Jacob Wright's Company in Colonel Philip Cortlandt's Second New York Regiment; Thomas Dolton, private; enlisted April 1, 1777.

Thomas Dalton's Muster roll Record:

Sept. 6, 1777 - Camped near London's Ferry.
September 1777 to January 1778, sick absent.
Muster Roll - Corporal - January 1778 to February 21, 1778.
Wounded at Albany February 1778 to March 1778.
Sick, absent March 1778 to April 4, 1778.
Sick, absent April to May 1778.
Sick, at Albany May, 1778.
Sick, absent July 22, 1778.
Sick at Fishkill Aug. 6 1778.
Sick at Fishkill September 4, 1778.
Sick at Fishkill September 10, 1778, White Plains.
Sick, hospital in the field October 7, 1778.
Sick at Fishkill Oct. Nov. Dec. 1778.
Rochester, Feb 1, 1779-sick in quarters Feb. to June 1779, Camp Jacob Plains
Oct. to Nov. 22, 1779, Pompton, sick
Present, Nov. 1779 to Jan. 27, 1780-Camp Morriston.
Transferred to the corps of Invalids May 15, 1780.

NEW YORK STATE LIBRARY, STATE ARCHIVES, V. 1 (Documents relating to the Colonial History of the State of New York, Volume 15, Page 192. Part of the Sixth Company, Second Regiment N.Y. line Col. Philip Van Corlandt.)

Dalton, Thomas, Apr. 1, 1777; Corporal, January, 1788.
Reduced January 1779.
Discharged May 15, 1780, by General Washington.

PENNSYLVANIA ARCHIVES, SERIES FIVE - VOLUME 4 - PAGES 23,49,69. Page 32 is the most informative. A roll of the non-commissioned officers and privates of the Invalid Regiment - Continental Line:

Thomas Dalton - Third New York Regiment - When commissioned - 1 August 1780.
When left the Regiment 31 May 1781.

The Invalid Regiment - Captain Hill's Company 1 June 1781, 31 December 1781:

Private Thomas Dalton - 3rd New York - 1 June 1781 Discharged 31 December 1781.

NEW YORK STATE LIBRARY - PHOTOSTATS REVOLUTIONARY WAR
MANUSCRIPTS, V. 15

Feb. 20, 1783:

Captain Wright certifies that Thomas Dolton was shot and wounded in the right leg in an action of the Regiment against the enemy at Bemis Heights on the 19 of September 1777
- There were no provisions made for the disabled soldiers after the war.

NEW YORK CITY, NEW YORK COUNT, Feb. 22, 1885. To Gerald Banker Esq. State Treasurer: Thomas Dolton with other disabled soldiers are living in the Almshouse. Request being made that part of their state pension be deducted for their support in the home. Sam Dodge, Keeper of Almshouse.

NEW YORK CITY, COUNTY OF N.Y. April 1788. Peter Elting M.D. certifies that Thomas Dolton was wounded in the right knee which disables him in great measure from following the occupation as a cooper. In March 1789 another certificate was filed by Richard Platt Esquier, who was appointed by t he Stat of New York. Thomas Dalton Account was audited 19 March 1789. Thomas Dalton signed his name with a X.

Note: More research is needed to find Thomas Dalton's death certificate.

Now here is the history of Thomas Dalton's journey to America. We are searching many records for our Thomas and when he landed in America. He re is some information as how he could have come over, and why! Thomas w as about 25 years old when these events happened to him.

American plantations and Colonies before 1776:

The English settlers in t he Colonies; The English settlers in the American Colonies owned large Plantations and had trouble finding enough workers to harvest their crops, mainly cotton and tobacco. The English Government come up with a plan to supply these settlers. They sent their undesirables, vagrants and convicts to these Plantations in place of a fine or prison term. They sent entire families on ships to America. This was

called Indentured Servitude. So on after the settling of Jamestown, there was a tremendous demand for labor, skilled and unskilled in the America Colonies. Many early Virginians' were English criminals who arrived in this country as transported convicts. The Transportation Act of 1718, was used by the circuit courts in England to select prisoners to be reprieved from jail on condition of their accepting a term of transportation to the Colonies. The majority were native Englishmen sentenced by English courts. There were also many Welsh, Irish and Scottish criminals transported as well.

Nearly 400 convict ships carrying 50,000 men, women and children left England bound for the American Colonies where their human cargo was sold or indentured as servants to work off their passage for a term of years. The 400 convict ships identified as having crossed the Atlantic from the ports of London, Bristol, Liverpool and Bideford between 1716 and 1776. A dozen or so were destined for the West Indies or the Carolinas before 1730. Thereafter Maryland and Virginia were the invariable destinations. Many ordinary individuals, who for numerous reasons wished to emigrate to the colonies, were quite unable to pay for their passage, and so a scheme gradually evolved where the emigrant could receive a free passage for the colonies provided that he was willing to be sold into bondage for a few years upon arrival. At the end of his time he received a reward in the shape of land. Indentured servants, as they were called, suffered from great hardships. It has been estimated that one half to two thirds of all white emigrants were indentured servants, redemptioners or convicts. When the prospective servant offered his service he was issued an indenture which he carried with him as proof of his terms, and was supposed to register himself as soon as he arrived in the Colonies. Very few copies of the hundreds of thousands of indentures issued that were kept in the office where he registered in England were saved. Also many hundreds of men failed to register after they landed in America. These men were called "runaways" and were hunted by the authorities.

Our ancestor Thomas was probably a Indentured Convict because of the following information. Three Thomas Dalton's are listed on a ships list from a C-D. "The Complete book of Emigrants and the Complete book of Emigrants in Bondage 1606-1776" by Peter Wilson Coldham. Also the book "Emigrants in Chains" by the same Author.

Thomas Dalton: Reprieved for Transportation for highway robbery, Lent, 1750. Ordered to Goal until summer 1750. Assizes, Hertfordshire.

Thomas Dalton: Sentenced to Transportation, October-December 1754, Middles ex.

Thomas Dalton: Sentenced to Transportation, summer 1756. Reprieved for Transportation. 14 years.

Lent. Transported Sept. 1757. Thetis, Surrey.

Now this last item is of importance to us, because in Peter Coldham's book it lists the Ship "Thetis" with Captain James Edwards at the helm, sailing to America in Sept. of 1757!

Also from: "Transportation to America, 1615-1775"

The ship "Thetis" sailed from the port of London, which is called the "Surrey Docks" in September of 1757. Its weight was 200 tons, and was owned by J. Stewart. There was 118 Convicts on board. It arrived on December 12th, 1757.

List of convicts sentenced to transportation (PRO, T 1/378)

Home Circuit - Lent - A Quarter Sessions Of Surrey; Thomas Dalton - 14 years

"These are to certify that Mr. John Steward of London, Merchant haft contracted for the transportation of the above felons and that the bonds, con tracts and other instruments for their transportation are in my custody. Dated the 21st day of July, 1757."

The Thetis is the name of a ship.

Goal is the English word for jail.

Lent is a Christian Holiday.

Surrey is also the name of the Surrey Docks of London.

Assizes is a inquest or court.

Hertfordshire, Middlesex, Surrey are Counties in England.

Reprieved is temporary suspension of a death sentence.

Transportation is being shipped to the Colonies.

Anyone of these Thomas Dalton's could be ours. The years of 1754 and 17 57 are close to 1760 that is listed for our Thomas Dalton in the "John Dalton Book of Genealogy".

I believe that our Thomas Dalton is the one listed on the date of 1757.

Also from a book, " Ships Passengers to America" by Peter W. Coldham. It lists 97 Dalton's on Ship Lists, including: Thomas Dalton, age, n/a, To America, Year of 1755

Other Sources that lists Thomas Dalton:

From "Passenger and Immigration Lists Index, 1538-1940"

Dalton, Thomas, Place, America, Year: 1750

Primary Individual : Dalton, Thomas

Source Code : 1217.4

Source Name : COLDHAM, PETER WILSON. "Bonded Passengers to America" 9 vols.

3. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1983. Vol. 4. Home Counties, 1655-1775: Surrey, Hertfordshire, Kent, Essex, and Sussex. 231p.

Source Page # 89

Dalton, Thomas, Place, America, Year: 1754

Primary Individual: Dalton, Thomas

Source Code: 1217.2

Source Name : COLDHAM, PETER WILSON. "Bonded Passengers to America" 9 vols. In 3. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1983. Vol. 2. Middlesex, 1617-1775. 334p.

Source Page #: 71

Dalton, Thomas, Place, America, Year: 1755

Primary Individual: Dalton, Thomas

Source Code: 1222

Source Name: COLDHAM, PETER WILSON, compiler and editor. " English Convicts in Colonial America". Volume 1: Middlesex 1617-1775.

Source: The county of Middlesex encloses the city of London, so these were largely London departures, transportation bonds, etc. The final eight pages list transport ships to American colonies, 1716-1775, bearing Middlesex convicts only. There is an excellent introduction to Transportation of convicts in Middlesex Sessions Records, 4 volumes; Goal Delivery Reports, 1620-1672; Books and Sessions Rolls. Also see nos. 1217.2-1217.3, Coldham.

Source Page #: 71

Dalton, Thomas: Place, America, Year: 1757

Primary Individual: Dalton, Thomas

Source Code: 1217.4

Source Name: COLDHAM, PETER WILSON. Bonded Passengers to America. 9 vols. In 3. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1983. Vol. 4. Home Counties, 1655-1775: Surrey, Hertfordshire, Kent, Essex, and Sussex.

Source Page # 20

Also: from the Dalton News Letter, by Helen Lu. There is a list of English convicts in Colonial America. "Thomas Dalton, sentenced in October and transported in December

of 1754. Source: "English Convicts in America", in by Peter Coldham.

Note: I have Letters to the Public Records Office in England for these Court records of the Thomas Dalton listed above.

The history of John Dalton Sr.

21- John Dalton Sr.; the first son of Thomas Dalton and Polly from Ireland, who was the first of our Dalton ancestors to be born in America, is taken from many sources and records. We still have much more information to find before every aspect of his life can be entered. Remember that these events happened over a few hundred years ago and we can only assume that we can't find records of every thing that happened to these ancestors. From all the resources I have read about John Dalton Sr., I believe that he was probable born in Maryland and not Virginia.

John Dalton Sr. was born in 1763 in a small settlement, Conococheaque, Frederick County, Maryland to Thomas Dalton and Polly/Betsy of Ireland. (Polly and Betsy being nicknames for Mary and Elizabeth) Local residents today call Conococheaque the Wilson District. Conococheaque is located on the western side of the mouth of Conococheaque Creek six miles west of Hagerstown and three miles east of Clearsprings. A writer in 1756 speaks of Conococheaque as an Irish settlement and it is not improbable that the people who first built a blockhouse and established a trading post at the mouth of Conococheaque Creek were of the sturdy race of Scotch-Irish. This little village was the first Settlement in Northern Maryland and was first farmed by white men about 1729. Conococheaque soon became important as being the outpost of civilization in the province. As early as 1763 supplies and provisions were dispatched eastward from this post. We can not be sure when Thomas Dalton first made his home in Conococheaque, but he was very lucky to stay alive. There was terrible Indian troubles going on around him before John Dalton was born.

Next we find John Dalton as a young volunteer, August 21, 1775 at the beginning of the Revolutionary War. He was a montross in the First Associated Company for the Township of Newton, Bucks Co. Pa. It was not uncommon to find beardless youths on active duty. At this time the Associated Company was not in the pay status of the State Militia. A montross was a soldier who assisted artillery gunners in loading, firing, sponging and moving the guns.

John Dalton then enlisted in the army in Philadelphia and served from Feb. 14, 1777 to March 22, 1781. He was an artillery artificer, a soldier who made platforms and repaired broken cannon carriages and torn harnesses for the artillery regiments --- a craftsman in the field of battle. After John Dalton Sr. was married and living in Luzerne County, he enlisted in the Luzerne County Militia from May 1 to June 14, in the Eleventh

Regiment of the United States.

John Dalton is found in the Daughters of the American Revolutionary War book, Under the listing of; DALTON, DAULTON, DOLTON

4. JOHN: b 1761/62 PA d 10-7-1835 PA m Elizabeth Cooker Pvt PA

They have a different birth date and shows he died in Penn. I believe he did die in Pennsylvania and was buried on 'Dalton Hollow'

As you can see John Dalton is now in Newtown, Bucks County. Sometimes after he was discharged in 1781 he met and married his wife Elizabeth Cooker. Where this took place we are not sure, but they ended up in the 1790 Census records of Philadelphia Co. See below.

Note: Muster Roll of the First Associated Company: Captain Francis Murray, list of privates, John Dalton. Pennsylvania Second Vacant Company, (The German Company) John Dalton, April 22, 1778

John Dalton: Enlisted at Philadelphia Feb. 14, 1777. Discharged: Mar. 22, 1781. Listed in the Muster Rolls of a company of infantry under the command of Captain Samuel Bowman's Eleventh Regiment of the United States: From May 1 to June 14, 1800, John Dalton, private. Pennsylvania Archives, Series five, Volume 3, Pages 1099 and 1135- Roll of Captain Noah Nicholas Company-Artillery Artificers: John Dalton, Feb. 14, 1777.

What was it like for our John Dalton in Colonial times from 1763 to 1790; how did the Colonists live. They dressed, in general with a decent coat, vest, pants and some kind of a hat. Old men had a great coat, a good pair of boots and flannel pants. The boots were made of good leather and lasted for a lifetime. They were long and reached to the knee. In the summer they wore a pair of wide petticoat trousers, reaching half way from the knee to the ankle. The women, old and young alike wore homemade flannel gowns in the winter; and in the summer, wrappers, or shepherdess that gathered around the neck. They were usually contented with one calico gown. The sleeves were short, and come only to the elbow. Also they had aprons made of checkered linen or cotton. They seldom wore caps, but only when they appeared in full dress. They wore thick and thin leather shoes, an inch and half high, with toes, which turned up.

Acute fevers were more frequent than they are today. Their dinners were generally the same every day, with something special on Sundays. First they had a dish of broth, called porridge, with a few beans in it. Then an Indian pudding with sauce, and then a

dish of boiled pork and beef, with round turnips and a few potatoes. Those who had a cow had milk and had toasted bread in it. Or they drank cider with bread and cheese. Sometimes all they had was milk and bread for supper. In these times no family had a barrel of flour, the farmer broke up a piece of new ground and planted it with wheat and turnips. This wheat with the help of a sieve was their flour. Then planted corn, which they called Indian grain. Their corn before they had built mills to grind it, was pounded with a wooden or stone pallet in a large log, hollowed out at one end. They cultivated barley, much of which they made into malt for beer, which they drank instead of ardent spirits. They grew flax, which they rotted in water and then made into thread and cloth. Venison could be had in abundance for the killing, and brook trout for the catching. Deer and bear meat was made more appetizing by smoking it. Jerked venison was also a favorite. Raccoon, woodchuck and squirrel were to be had when larger game could not be found.

The first houses were very coarse structures. They had steep roofs, covered with thatch and straw laid one over the other. The fireplace was made of rough stones and the chimney of boards and short sticks, crossed over each other and then plastered inside with clay. In those days the young men and women did not consider it a hardship to walk every place, including going to church on Sunday. The men always had a good horse to ride. Everyone went to church and shared their horse and wagon with their neighbors. Our John Dalton was a typical farmer and he survived many skirmishes with the Indians and later with the British Army in the Revolutionary War.

After the war John Dalton married Elizabeth Cooker, born Dec 24 1760, Bucks Co. Pa. She was usually called Betsy and was of German decent, commonly called Pennsylvania Dutch. Their first child was a male, which we don't know his name, and who was born somewhere in Philadelphia Co. Pa. At this time there were no vital statistics kept. Many children died of measles, diphtheria, small pox and scarlet fever. Maybe this child died very young. John and Elizabeth Dalton's other children were Margaret, Sarah, Henry, John Jr. Elizabeth, Simon Cooker, Jemima, Charles and Harriet.

In the first Federal Census of 1790 (Page 232) of Blockley Township, Philadelphia Co. Pa. Cresson's Alley: Fifth between Arch and Race Streets:

John Dalton (silver smith) - Heads of families: 1, Males under 16: 1,
Free white females: 1

John Dalton's next three children were born in Bucks County, probably in Newtown Township. Remember he was a private in the Newtown Township militia. These children were: Margaret, born in 1792. Sarah, born in 1796, and Henry born in 1797.

John Dalton was in Luzerne County in 1801 where his namesake, John Dalton Jr. was born in the Township of Wyoming.

John Dalton next is known to be in Wilkes-Barre Township, Luzerne Co. where his next son, Simon Cooker Dalton was born. This was in 1806.

Sometime after 1806 John Dalton was given a War grant of land in Wysox Township in upper Luzerne Co. Pa., later changed to Bradford Co. in 1812. John and his growing family settled on a little stream named Wysox, above the Schultz place. He called his farm, "Dalton Hollow". The Little Wysox creek drains into the Susquehanna River. The name Wysox is from the Indian word "Wysauking". The town was first called New Baltimore before being named Wysox. The township of Wysox had an area of not more than fifteen square miles. The Wysox creek flows through the town, receiving the principal affluent at Myersburg, which is the outlet of the lake on Pond Hill. Farther to the north is the Little Wysox Creek.

In 1829, John Dalton's family now included Margaret, Henry, John Jr. Elizabeth, Simon, Jemima, Charles and Harriet and all but Sarah were still living in Wysox. Sarah had died in 1813.

Sarah was probably buried somewhere on the Dalton farm, but also could be buried at the Church Cemetery. This cemetery is located behind the Wysox Presbyterian Church.



Wysox, Bradford County Pennsylvania

The first burials in Wysox were made on the slope toward the river. According to the Memorial Paper, written by Edward E. Hoagland for the Centennial of 1928. "When the railroad was put through this valley in 1869, it became necessary to remove the cemetery that was near Dr. Madill's, and many of the families who had ancestors buried there had them removed to the cemetery back of the church. There were few costly markers in those days, and most of the graves were marked by a stone of local origin that was not hard enough to withstand the erosion of the elements. Hence, it is to be lamented there is a section of this cemetery where it cannot be determined who is buried there, for there are no inscriptions remaining on the markers.

Most of the Dalton family, including their sons and daughter-in-laws joined the First Presbyterian Church of Wysox. This Church was first organized on Nov. 29th, 1827 by those members of the Presbyterian Church of Wysox who preferred the Presbyterian form of government. The church only existed until Sept. 29th 1830 when it united with the Congregational Church, which in the meantime had adopted the Presbyterian format of government, so that the two Presbyterian Church's become one under the name of the "Old Presbyterian Church of Wysox". The Church leaders decided they needed a bigger Church building, so they asked their members to "subscribe" to the building fund.

In April of 1833, a tragedy over took the Dalton Family. One of John Dalton's son's, Henry Dalton drown attempting to cross Wysox Creek near its confluence with the Susquehanna River during the spring high water season. It would be several more years before the Dalton clan would understand that the Susquehanna River would forge their destiny. Looking back and knowing the fate of these men, one wonders whether they had already heard the rumors, or read the gossip, or had any inkling of the gospel storm swirling around them. Would John Dalton accept the gospel restored to earth when Joseph Smith & Oliver Cowdery baptized each other in the Susquehanna River, some 50-60 miles from their home on May 15 1829. After the organization of the L.D.S. church in 1830, one of the first branches was in Columbia, Bradford Co. Pennsylvania, which is less than 35 miles from the Wysox area.

In about 1835, the Dalton clan, sold out, packed up and moved to Michigan. This caravan would have almost 50 people in it, with wagons, stock, household goods and provisions. For John Jr., Simon Cooker and Charles Dalton and their families this journey would be good training for the trek they would take in the yet unforeseeable future. After settling in Michigan, the Dalton Family begins to span out across the Western United States.

John Dalton lived in Sharon Township, Washtenaw Co. Michigan until he died we think on Oct. 7 1838. Further research is needed to prove this date.

John Dalton Sr. must have lived with his son Simon Cooker in Sharon Township in 1835 and just maybe all of Dalton's lived on the same piece of property until they bought their own lands after August of 1837, when Simon moved to Jackson County.

We only have a record of about when and where John Dalton Sr. died, from the "Family Bible", the John Dalton book of Genealogy. Quote from book; "John Dalton, born 1763, and died, 7 Oct. 1838, in Preb or Prob, Freedom Township, Washtenaw County, Michigan". Preb or Prob is not listed anywhere on maps in Freedom Township, so I believe this to mean, "probably". After viewing the land patent of Simon Cooker, in 1835, (see the history of Simon Cooker Dalton) John Dalton, Sr., probably died in Sharon Hollow, also in Washtenaw County.

John Dalton Sr. was not to know that his sons were to be greatly involved in the settling of the Great State of Utah.

22- Simon Cooker Dalton; was born on Jan. 10th, 1806 in Wilkes-Barre Luzerne Co. Pennsylvania, the 7th child of John Dalton & Elizabeth Cooker. The Dalton family moved to Bradford Co. Penn. sometimes around 1807 and lived on a little farm they called "Dalton Hollow". It was near the village of Wysox on the little Wysox Creek. Nothing is known of Simon's childhood, but we can only assume that like all of John Dalton's children he had to do chores, like feeding chickens, collecting eggs, milking cows, planting seeds and pulling weeds in the garden. Simon pumped water from the well, chopped wood for the fireplace to cook and to keep warm. He soon learned to pluck a chicken, slop the pigs and gut out a deer if the family was going to eat. As adults, he and his brothers all worked as blacksmiths, farmers and coopers, all trades they would need to survive in a world none of them could ever dream of.

Simon Dalton was 19 years old when he married Anna Wakeman of Wysox (Source: From the "Settler" a newspaper printed at the time in Bradford County). Simon Cooker Dalton would during the course of his life, married to five wives. Yes he became a polygamist after he joined the LDS Church.

Simon and all the Dalton's packed up and moved to Washtenaw, Co. Michigan sometime in 1835, where Simon bought land for his family to start a new life in a strange frontier. There were many Indian's in the area that he and his family had to deal with.

The first we find of Simon is this land patent record: From the book; "Landsmen of Washtenaw County"

"Dalton, Simon C., res. of Bradford Co. Pa., Southeast $\frac{1}{4}$ of the Northwest $\frac{1}{4}$ of Section 18, 40 acres, of Township 3 South, Range 3 East, patent.
Date: June 3rd, 1835."

Note that Simon spelled his name, Dolton and the others spelled theirs, Dalton

This plat of land is in Sharon Township, which is directly west of Freedom Township. So as you can see, our Dalton's were in Washtenaw County sometimes before the spring of 1835. We have thought that they first settled in Freedom Township, but in fact, at least Simon Cooker Dalton first bought property in Sharon Township.

The 1840 U.S. census in Grass Lake, Jackson Co. Michigan lists the family of Simon Cooker Dalton and his mother Elizabeth Cooker Dalton. While in Michigan, most of the Dalton's joined the Latter-day Saints Church. Simon C. Dalton was baptized on April 13th 1842 by William Burton.

After living in Michigan for approximately 8 years, Simon C. Dalton, and his family moved to Nauvoo, Illinois, sometimes between of 1842 & 1843, where they became acquainted with the Prophet Joseph Smith. After locating at least some sort of temporary housing in Nauvoo, one of the first thing Simon had to do was to register for the Militia. The law required that every able bodied male, who became residents of Nauvoo, must join the Nauvoo Legion. (The Mormon Legion was organization on Feb. 3rd, 1841) Charles and Simon C. Dalton were tenants at the Nauvoo Hotel in Room # 37. In Nauvoo all the Dalton brothers worked on the new Temple & Nauvoo House. In Nauvoo, Simon's trade was that of a knife-maker, guard and a blacksmith. When any undesirable people came to the city, he and others got together with knives and while whittling on sticks and whistling, they would gather about the undesirables and invite them to leave Nauvoo. This purpose was often accomplished. He was also a postmaster as other documents show.



Present day air view of Nauvoo

Simon C. Dalton received his Patriarchal Blessing from John Smith in Nauvoo on Jan 10th, 1846. Simon was married to his second wife, Elnora Lucretia Warner on Feb 4th, 1846 by Heber C. Kimball in the Nauvoo Temple. Simon married his third wife, Elnora's sister Lura Ann Warner sometime during 1848, where we don't know.

While Simon Cooker Dalton and his family was living in Kanessville, Iowa awaiting their turn to join a wagon train for the trip to the Salt Lake Valley, Simon placed an ad in the "Frontier Guardian", a local newspaper for "Blacksmithing". He was trying to make a little extra money for their long journey, which would begin in a few months.

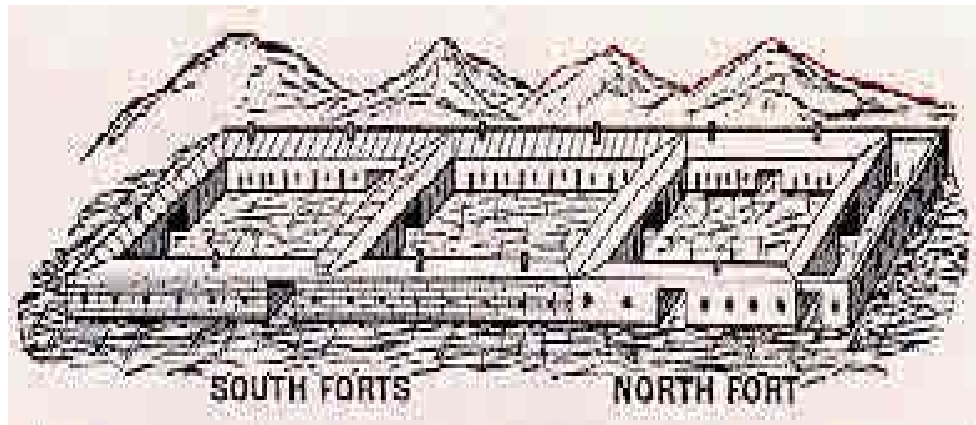
BLACKSMITHING

The undersigned has fitted up a shop, a few doors west of the Printing Office, and is now prepared to invoke all kinds of work in the shape of blacksmithing. Persons wishing blacksmithing done will please give me a call. I feel confident that I can give satisfaction. All work entrusted to my care will be executed promptly and in good order.

(Signed) Simon Dolton Kanessville, March 20th, 1849

Simon Cooker Dalton and family crossed the plains to the Great Salt Lake Valley with the Silas Richards Company. This wagon train left Kanessville, Iowa on July 10th, 1849 with about 100 wagons and arrived in the Salt Lake Valley on Oct. 27th, 1849. Simon C. Dalton had one wagon, six oxen, two cows, two loose cattle.

In 1848, with the arrival of the last wagon train of the season, there were now approximately 5,000 saints in the valley. There were at least three forts built at this point. Each of these forts was about half a mile long and 40 rods wide. Within these forts, the Territory of Deseret was organized. The first legislature met here and the first school was taught. For safety purposes these forts is where all the Dalton's would spent their first winter in the Valley. In Feb. of 1849 the residents of the Territory organized a temporary government which they called the "State of Deseret". After much debate, in Sept. of 1850, an act of Congress created the "Territory of Utah." Congress did not make it a State because too many Southern States did not want another Anti-slavery State added to the union. Brigham Young was appointed Governor of the Territory.



Drawing of the fort that the saints lived in during their first year in SLC

On Jan. 14th, 1849, Salt Lake City was divided into 17 Church Wards, each containing nine city blocks. The Daltons chose land a few blocks east and south of the old fort, near where the present day Liberty Park is now. It was here the 10th Ward was organized on Feb. 22nd, 1848. For protection, a fence was built around the Ward boundaries. 10th Ward records of this time shows: "John Dalton, Edward Dalton, Charles Dalton, Henry Dalton donated, self and teams for two days work"

Simon Cooker Dalton owned Lot #5 on block 40 in Salt Lake City in 1850. He was a member of the 10th Ward, Salt Lake Stake, Great Salt Lake City. The boundary of the 10th, ward was Third South to the North, Sixth South to the south, Sixth East to the West, and Tenth East to the east.

Note: 10th Ward records of Oct. 1851 shows the following Tithing due and paid:

	Sum Total	Due
John Dalton Jr.	\$540	\$54 paid in full
Charles Dalton	\$155	\$15.50 credited \$15
Simon C. Dalton	\$928	\$92.80 paid in full

10th Ward Records for S.L.C. Oct. 1851: Simon Cooker Dalton - Tithing due and paid; sum total of \$928 paid. \$92.80 due. paid.

The Census of Salt lake County 1851 shows:

Head of Family	age	sex	where born:
Simon C. Dolton	45	M	Penn.
Anose (sic)	38	F	N.Y.

Rosetta (Berry)	7	F	N.Y.
Charles (Berry)	6	M	N.Y.
Francis	3	M	Iowa
Mary Ann	1	F	Deseret

Rosetta and Charles Berry are the children of Simon's 2nd. Wife, Elnora Warner Berry Dalton.

Here is a interesting story on the relationship between Simon, Elnore, and her first husband, Robert Berry; taken from a page of Leslie Dalton Crunk's book; "The History of Charles Dalton"

Quote;

"Robert Berry married Elnora Warner in 1842 in Reading, Michigan. They had two children, Mary Rosetta Berry and Charles Alma Berry. This family left Michigan with a caravan for the west to Nauvoo. As the work was scarce in Nauvoo, Robert Berry decided to return to Michigan, leaving his family in Nauvoo with her family who was also in Nauvoo at this time. As Elnora did not receive letters or money from Robert, she was persuaded to believe that he had left her and he would never return. Simon Cooker Dalton who was a postmaster in Nauvoo during this time, become her ardent and persistent suitor and admitted many years later when he was a old man with a family in Utah that he had confiscated her mail!

Meantime Robert Berry returned to Nauvoo to get his family. He found the city deserted and his family gone. It is claimed that so great was his grief that his hair turned white overnight. Robert Berry, not knowing where to find his family, returned to Michigan with a broken heart.

Later in life, his daughter, Rosetta's, father in-law on his LDS mission to Michigan, found Robert Berry. Robert then found out about the story of what Simon had done. Robert Berry was heard to tell, if he ever met Simon Dalton, he would kill him! Years later he did go west and to find Simon, and at his field gate in Centerville, Utah, Robert said to Simon, I have always claimed that I would kill you, but I will let the Lord take care of you"

Note: From a article appearing in the Deseret News; July 17th, 1931. Calling attention to the low cost of housing in the early days and of Simon Cooker Dalton: " The first Blacksmith shops was owned by: Simon Cooker Dalton, and others.

Note: From a muster roll of Company A, Battalion Life Guards, commanded by Major George D. Grant. Mustered in G.S.L. City, May 31st, 1851:

Henry S. Dalton
George Dalton
Simon C. Dalton

Other Dalton Brothers Nauvoo Legion records:

Muster Roll of May 29th, 1852:

John Dalton
Henry Dalton

Pay roll of a detachment of Captain George D. Grant, Company A. Mounted Rangers, Nauvoo Legion ordered out in pursuit of Shoshone Indians during the month of Sept. and Oct. 1850. We the under-signed, acknowledge to have received of Wm. J. Appleby, pay master, Nauvoo Legion: the sums set opposite of our names respectively in full payment for our services for the times respectively specified.

Charles Dalton	Private	No. of Days	11	paid	\$2.50 from Sept. 25th to Oct. 5th, 1850
----------------	---------	-------------	----	------	--

Henry Dalton	Private	No. of Days	11	paid	\$2.50 from Sept. 25th to Oct. 5th. 1850
--------------	---------	-------------	----	------	--

Source: Film # 0485555 at S.L.C Family History Library.

Report of the detachment of Life Guards, Nauvoo Legion, Feb. 19th, 1851:
Commander George D. Grant; Captain Charles H. Kimball; Return Roll:

Simon Dolton	Private	12 days in service; 2 horse's
		17 days in service; 7 horse's

Sometime before 1852 Simon C. Dalton moved his family a few miles north to Centerville, Utah to make a permanent home. Simon and Elnora Lucretta Warner had nine children and Elnora died in bed after giving childbirth to their 10th child. This child was never named. Elnora was buried Dec. 5th, 1865, at Centerville.

Note: In the 1860, 1870 Utah census; In 1860 Simon Cooker Dalton had a household of 9 people with \$2000 dollars in real wealth and \$290 dollars in personal wealth. In 1870, Simon had a household of 7 people with \$800 in real wealth and \$400 in personal wealth.

After living in Centerville, Utah Simon C. Dalton moved his family south of Provo, Utah Co. to Springville. He died there on Oct. 14th, 1885, and is buried in the Springville Cemetery.

23- Charles Wakeman Dalton; was a Farmer, Rancher, Sheriff, Constable, owned a store and a freight company. At the end of his life he was a butcher in Beaver City. He was also a polygamist. He married 5 wives. His first wife was Julietta Bowen, who ended up living and dieing in Circleville, my home town. From her children, born in Circleville there is a ton of stories, which will be addressed in another book.

Charles Wakeman Dalton was born July 10th 1826 in Wysox, Bradford Co. Penn. On a little farm called Dalton Hollow. He was the first son of Simon Cooker Dalton & Anna Wakeman. In about 1835, the entire Dalton clan sold out, lock stock and barrel, packed up and moved to Washtenaw, County Michigan.

Charles W. Dalton was the first to join the Saints on April 27th 1843. Charles followed his family from Michigan, to Nauvoo. Charles married wife number 1, Julietta E. Bowen on Jan. 13th 1847 in New York State. (see complete story of Juliette Bowen in her history section) They then crossed the plains to the Utah Territory sometime in 1849 and settled near the other Dalton's. in Salt lake City. While living in S.L.C. Charles W. Dalton married wife number 2, Elizabeth Heskett Allred on Nov. 2nd 1850. (She is my G-G-Grandmother)

Charles W. Dalton owned Lot # 7, on block 40 in Salt Lake City.

In 1848, with the arrival of the last wagon train of the season, there were now approximately 5,000 saints in the Valley. There were at least three forts built at this point. Each of these forts was about half a mile long and 40 rods wide. Within these forts, the Territory of Deseret was organized. The first legislature met here and the first school was taught. For safety purposes these forts is where all the Dalton's would spent their first winter in the Valley. In Feb. of 1849 the residents of the Territory organized a temporary government which they called the "State of Deseret". After much debate, in Sept. of 1850, an act of Congress created the "Territory of Utah." Congress did not make it a State because too many Southern States did not want another Anti-slavery State added to the union. Brigham Young was appointed Governor of the Territory.

On Jan. 14th, 1849, Salt Lake City was divided into 17 Church Wards, each containing nine city blocks. The Dalton's chose land a few blocks east and south of the old fort. It was here the 10th Ward was organized on Feb. 22nd, 1848. For protection, a fence was built around the Ward boundaries. 10th Ward records show: 'John Dalton, Edward Dalton, Charles Dalton, Henry Dalton donated, self and teams for two days work"

The southern part of Utah was colonized in the fall of 1849. It was ordered by the Presidency of the Church that Parley P. Pratt with a company of 50 men, should explore this area, which they called Dixie. Among these men were the following:

Charles W. Dalton, age 23, John Dalton Jr., age 49., Edward Dalton, age 22, (son of John Jr.) and John D. Lee, age 39. On Jan. 13th 1851, this company of 50 men reached a spot near the present town of Parowan, on what was called Center Creek. On Jan 17th 1851 a election was held and the following town officials were elected: CHARLES W. DALTON as a Constable, John D. Lee as a Magistrate among others. William H. Dane, Edward Dalton and others laid out the town site, and then began surveying a location for a Fort. George A Smith officially named the new Fort, Louisa, in honor of Louisa Beaman, the first documented women to marry into Polygamy among the Latter-Day Saints. Later that summer, Brigham Young and a large company arrived at the little Fort on the first annual tour of the Southern settlements. He renamed the new town site at Center Creek, Parawon. The Church Ward or Branch in Parowan at first was under the direction of the American Fork Stake. (Note: Taken from a registry of names of persons residing in the various Wards as to Bishop's reports. G.S.L. City Dec. 28th, 1852 to 1853.)

Charles W. Dalton married wife number 3, Sarah Jane Lee in Parowan on Dec. 31st 1852. Charles was also in Salt Lake City when he married wife number 4, Sarah Lucinda Lee on Oct. 3rd 1868. Charles also married his last wife, number 5, Emma Roberta Lee, sister of Lucinda, in S.L.C. on Oct. 9th 1871. Sarah Jane Lee was the daughter of John D. Lee of Mountain Meadows Massacre fame and Sarah Lucinda Lee & Emma Roberta Lee were daughters of John P. Lee.

In the spring of 1853 Brigham Young recognized the need of the Pioneers for clothing, food and iron ore for tools. Exploration in the early 1850's confirmed the Southern half of Utah had the potency to grow cotton, grapes, figs, flax, hemp, rice, sugarcane, tobacco and produce iron ore. In May of 1854 Brigham Young sent a group of missionaries under the leadership of Rufus C. Allen to the South. This company arrived in Pine Valley, about 35 miles Northeast of St. George, Utah on the headwaters of the Santa Clara Creek in early spring. Charles W. Dalton and family was in this company.

Note: Newspaper article in the Deseret News, May 31st. 1853.

"Provo, May 31st 1853. At Harmony we received a hearty welcome from bros. John D. Lee and Charles Dalton, E. H. Grove and Solomom Chamberlain, and made to understand that we were at home, and had every attention paid to us that could be acceptable to a weary soldier. Our animals being weary, we though best to tarry a day and rest. There were a dozen or more Piute Indians around. They appeared to be perfectly under control of Major Lee. They seemed honest, industrious and anxious to conform to the manners and customs of the whites. They excel all other Indians in these particulars, that i have ever met with in the mountains. I saw the son of the old Chief Toquar from the Rio Virgin, he seems well deposed and which to have the Mormons

settle there and learn them to work; says they did know how to work once, but their father's got to warring and become lazy and lost the art; said they were afraid of Chief Walker, and that he would kill their men and take their squaws and children prisoners. Fort Harmony is well situated on a commanding eminence on the north bluff of Ash Creek, and though small and few in numbers, it is secure and well stockaded and the farm nearly all picketed in with ten foot pickets. There is considerable timber, consisting of Pine, Ceder, Ash and Cottonwood. Here they made supper and had a dance in the evening in honor of our visit. The company were willing to do their duties, and we had prayers, morning and evening.

Next we find Charles W. Dalton:

On Jan. 4th 1856, the citizens of this large area sent a petition signed by thirty two men, the total male population, asking the Court for a County Government to be set up, with the county seat to be at Fort Harmony. The petition was granted and the Government was setup on Feb. 7th 1856, with John D. Lee as Probate Judge, Clerk and Assessor. The first order of business of the court was to try a case against Enos the Indian. The sheriff, CHARLES W. DALTON (sheriff from April 1856 to April 1857) was ordered to take Enos into custody and to summon 12 residents of the County to serve as jurors. Also some of the records of the Washington County Court held on Sept. 1856 tells of a application by Charles W. Dalton and others for the control of the timber in Pine Valley Canyons for milling of lumber. The Court was presided over by Judge John D. Lee and Lee made the following Grant. "Where as the control of water, timber and grass of Pine Valley is hereby granted to Charles W. Dalton. Loronzo W. Roundy, John Blackburn and Robert Richy for the purpose specified and the privilege of so much said water as will be necessary to irrigate two acres of land for gardens; also the control of the springs in Grass Valley for irrigation.

Sometime during the year 1860, the Dalton's received a letter from their sisters in Michigan announcing the death of their mother, Betsy Cooker Dalton. She was well into her 90's at this time.

Next we find Charles W. Dalton on June 26th 1865 as a settler of Chicken Creek, which was located about one and one half miles from the present site of Levan Utah.

The Deseret News reports; "The following settlers of Chicken Creek petitioned the Church authorities for a branch government,. These people were: Martin Rollins , Edsol Elmer, George Ellison, William Morgan, Robert Rollins, Seth Ollorton, Antomima Tidwell, Nancy Sly, Norman Wilson Hartley, Frederick Green, Jimer Palmer, James Kettleman and CHARLES W. DALTON. These people and others built homes, planted gardens, orchards and fields of wheat. As years went by however, they come to the conclusion that this was not a very good site to have their Community. So after 6 to 8

years they decided to find another home site.

In the winter of 1856 George A Smith found a area that could potentially provide good pasturage for cattle and farming. Near by canyons also had abundant timber for lumber and available water for a mill. This place was named Beaver, for the many Beaver Dams that were abundant in the streams. In 1858 Beavers population received a boost from Mormons leaving San Bernardino, California at the on set of the Utah War. In 1865-1868 the inhabitants of Circleville Utah abandoned their community because of the Black Hawk War and made their way to Beaver before returning to Circleville after the War was over.

The following stories are from the Diaries of John D. Lee showing his many dealings with Charles W Dalton.

Sunday, June 1st 1867 -

" Was camped out at Chicken Creek, met Charles W. Dalton with a drove of beef cattle en route to the city (S.L.C.) The bridge had been washed out by high water hence the crossing was muddy. In crossing, Dalton's waggon upset in the creek & wet all their bedding, clothing and supplies. Also \$130 in green backs"

Wednesday, June 4th 1867 -

" Left a mare with Julia Dalton (Charles 1st wife) at Fillmore by request of Charles W Dalton."

Sunday, June 8th 1867 Beaver Utah.

" This morning I eat breakfast with Betsey Dalton (Charles 2nd wife) and I promised to dine with Sarah and her family. The dinner was tasty. Sarah presented me with a photograph of herself and Charles. Also one of Betsy, all of which I put in my album."

Wednesday , Oct. 16th 1867

" At Beaver City I left my son Samuel P. Lee to stay with his sister Sarah Jane to go to school. we spent the day with Charles W Dalton and family."

Tuesday, Nov. 28th 1867.

" The roads were almost impassable on account of the mud an it was still raining at Chickin Creek. We met Charles W. Dalton, my son-in- law, of the firm of Dalton & Clayton on their way to the city (S.L.C.) with a drove of cattle of several hundred head. They had their barrage waggon upset in the creek and everything had got soaked. They encamped to dry things out".

Wednesday, Dec. 4th 1867.

" We reached Beaver and stayed over night with my daughter Sarah Jane. we were kindly received by her husband Charles and family".

Tuesday, Jan. 30th 1868.

" At 3 o'clock PM we arrived in Beaver at Charles Dalton's place and delivered up the pork he had ordered. We took dinner with Julia & Betsey Dalton and had breakfast with them the next morning. Also dinned with my daughter Sarah on Weds".

Sunday, June 1st 1873.

" This morning we held a public meeting. After the meeting we responded to the River's edge, where Elder James Grover baptized HEBER DALTON, the son of Charles W. Dalton & my daughter Sarah Jane".

Charles W. Dalton moved some of his family across the mountain to Circleville in 1874. Charles had probably heard about "Circle Valley" from the Circleville residents that had lived in Beaver during their exile, because of the Black Hawk War. He was the first Mormon to resettle in the Valley. There were only four other families living there. He was followed by some of his sons and their families in 1875. He built up a large ranch Northeast of town.

Charles Wakeman Dalton was a Utah pioneer and early Latter-day Saint that helped to settle some of the small towns in Southern Utah in the early 1850's. He married five wives's and had as many as 38 children that we know of.

In 1880 Charles Wakeman Dalton was living in St. George with one of his wives, Lucinda Lee Dalton and three of their children; Belle, Guy and Ernest-ages 9, 4, and 1.

Charles Wakeman Dalton probably was living with one of his sons in Beaver, Utah when he died on June, 18th 1883. He was a true pioneer, very enterprising and was involved in many of the events of the settling of Southern Utah. He was my Great-Great-Grandfather, and he is my hero, why? Because he was a true pioneer. He grew up in Wysox, Penn. And as a young man, traveled to Michigan, Nauvoo, crossed the plains, and helped settle Southern Utah. He then moved to Circleville for awhile, and because he did, I was born in that little town of Circleville.

24- Martin Carroll Dalton Sr.; was born on Feb. 17th 1867 in Beaver City, Beaver Co. Utah, and was the 8th child of Charles Wakeman Dalton and Elizabeth Haskell Allred. We know that Martin C. Dalton grew up in Beaver, Utah in his early years and moved to Circleville, Piute Co. Utah when he was 6 or 7 years old. He would spend the next 62 years working hard to support his family of 9 children and his only wife, Charlotte. He was a very prominent man in Circleville society.

This same little valley was where Martin Carroll Dalton Sr. would spent the rest of his life with his family. The most important events that came into the lives of Martin C. Dalton and his wife Charlotte was the birth of their children; Mary Irene, Martin Carroll Jr., James Christopher, Nellie Vera, Taylor, Francis, Lawrence and Vernon. They were tenderly nurtured and given the best their parents could afford. It was on June 16th, 1909, when their youngest daughter, Mary Irene Dalton and James Lester Peterson were married in the Manti Temple. Martin and Charlotte went with them and were also married in the temple and had their children sealed to them.



Martin C. Dalton Sr. & Sarah Lucinda Iva Veater

They also must have suffered much pain in the loss of three of their children. James Christopher, born on the 11th of Nov. and died on the 28th of Nov, 1896. They raised two sons to adulthood, only to have them taken from them at the young age of 21 and 22. Taylor Dalton was born on the 8th of April, 1900 and died of Bright's Disease on Sept. 5th, 1921. Francis Dalton was born on Feb. 5th 1902 and died July 6th, 1924. He was injured by a stick of dynamite going off in his hands while helping to set off the early morning bomb to celebrate the 4th of July 1924. He lived two days with one of his hands completely blown off and a large hole in his stomach. His death on July 6th 1924 saddened the entire town of Circleville, and for many years thereafter, in honor and respect for his parents the early morning bomb on the 4th of July was discontinued. As if this tragedy was not enough for Martin Carroll and Charlotte to bear, their daughter Mary Irene's husband, James Lester Peterson died leaving their daughter with four small children, Una 10 years, Ralph 8 years, Gala 3 years and a baby, Harvey 1 year old.

The first home Martin C. Dalton, mostly called "Mart", and his wife, Charlotte, lovingly called "Nellie", had was a little log cabin that stood where the James L. Whittaker home is at the present time. In about 1899, Martin C. Dalton's brother Orsen, had a big brick two story house that he sold to Martin. It was not completely finished at this time,

however, and Martin Carroll spent the next few years finishing the large and very nice home. The parlor was completely carpeted and had a matching set of beautiful upholstered furniture. It also had a organ, one of the few in town. This room was kept special for company. This home was also one of the first in Circleville to have acetylene or carbide lights. Everyone else was using coal-oil lamps.



Martin C. Dalton Sr. home in Circleville

Along with this home that grandfather bought at this time was a square mile of land, some farming ground and some pasture land. Martin Carroll owned the first Community Hall in Circleville. This dance hall was known for years as Dalton Hall. It was across the street from the home where Tex Grigsby lives now. People would come from miles around to dance, sometimes until early morning. At times they would pay for their tickets with vegetables and other kinds of produce. This was also the place that Stock Companies, traveling through the county would put on their plays. The hall had a stage and two sets of scenery, one for outside scenes and one for inside scenes. It had a large curtain that roller up. It was the place also that the town Christmas parties were held. Martin Carroll also was musically inclined. He and his daughter, Vera used to sing together at many of the community activities. Later when a newer Social Hall was build in another part of town, Martin Carrell then put barrels full of roller skates in his building and rolling staking become the most popular sport of young and old for a long

time. Finally this fine old Dalton Hall that had served the town's activities for so long became a barn that housed the many horses that Martin Carroll owned. He always had many good saddle horses for his children and grandchildren to ride. He also owned the fastest race horse in the County, called Red Cloud. Red Cloud raced all over Utah and beat everyone he ever came up against.

Martin C. Dalton also owned a store he called the "Equitable" When the Railroad came into Marysvale, north of Circleville, Martin Carroll would take his team and wagon and go to Marysvale to get his supplies. Once he slipped while hauling supplies and fell from his wagon, injuring his leg badly. He suffered pain in this leg for the rest of his life.

Martin Carroll Dalton Sr. was a very hard worker and was always busy. He spent a lot of his time in the mountains surrounding Circleville. He lived in the ranger station houses on Big Flat, Dry Flat and Tushar, when he was working for the Forest Service as a guard. He herded sheep and cattle not only for himself, but for many ranches and farmers around the valley. He shared his home with many people, Stake Presidents and dignitaries of the Church when they came to Circleville to visit or hold Stake Conferences. It was always a special treat for Martin to sit in a rocking chair in front of the fireplace with one of his grandchildren in his arms singing to them. This Dalton home has been occupied by some member of the Dalton family for over 75 years.

Martin Carroll Dalton Sr. Was taken ill in 1936. He developed pneumonia and it was more than he could shake off. His wife "Nellie" was by his bedside constantly day and night. If she left for a moment he would say "where's Nellie, I need her". On Dec. 18th 1936 he passed away in this grand old home of his at the age of sixty nine. He was buried in the Circleville Cemetery. His beloved wife Charlotte was buried next to him five years later.

Of note here is that I have also wrote a book about my Whittaker side of the family. It starts with a man by the name of Samuel Whittaker, who was born in East Lancashire, England, not to many miles from this Dalton family we have talked about.

Samuel's great-great-grandson, James Whittaker Sr. came to Utah in the fall of 1851 and was one of the first to settle Cedar City in Southern Utah. His son James Jr. moved to Circleville where he had a daughter, named Charlotte Ellen, who was my great-grandmother.

25- Martin Carroll Dalton Jr.; was born on May 1st, 1889 in Circleville, Utah, the first child of Martin Carroll Dalton Sr. and Charlotte Ellen Whittaker. Martin C. Dalton Jr. had six brothers and sisters.

Their children were, Afton Garenta, Iris Urada, Garth Carrell, Francis Cecil, Rhea Druce, Taylor Boyd, and Sybil Joy. Most of these children were born in a little log house

with a lean-to kitchen, build near the Sevier River.

Martin C. Dalton Jr. was a very quite an reserved man. He had clear gray eyes and light brown hair. He stood 5' 10" tall and normally weighed around 165 lbs.

Martin C. Dalton Jr. grew up in Circleville doing the things that children do in a small town everywhere. He had to do chores, because his father was a very hard worker and expected his sons and daughters to help carry the load and do the same. It was very tough on the little family of Dalton's in the late 1900's and early 1900's. School and church played a large roll in the development of young Martin Jr. When Martin Jr. was a young man his father owned a roller skating rink and Martin Jr. and his sister Vera spent a great amount of their spare time practicing some fancy steps and they won many contests. Sometimes a whole string of skaters would take hold of hands, then Martin Jr. would take them, oh ever so fast and then pop them off and away they would go in all directions trying to right themselves.



Martin C. Dalton Jr.

Martin C Dalton also loved horses and always had a good saddle horse to ride. The Dalton's owned two of the fastest race horses in the Country. His father Martin C. Dalton Sr. gave him his big red stallion called Red Cloud. Martin Jr. helped to train him, and rode him in races at the county fairs around Southern Utah. Martin Jr. had a great love for this horse, and they understood each other perfectly.

Martin Carroll Dalton Jr. Married Iva Lucinder Veater on Dec. 23rd, 1912 in Junction, Piute Co. Utah. He was 19 and she was 17. Their first home was a two room log house. They sold his beloved race horse Red Cloud and used the money to expand this little house because their family was growing and more room was needed. Their home was on a large corner lot and Martin Jr. planted a large garden on one side and had many fruit trees to the west and south. In the fall friends and neighbors came to see all the things that had been harvested from their garden and orchard. This old house is still standing at the south end of Circleville on Highway 89. In 1942 , the second world war had broken out and times were tough for Martin Jr. and his family so they moved to Las Vegas to find work. They lived in Las Vegas for a few years with Martin Jr. working at several jobs, but his heart was still in the little valley where he grew up. He missed the Mountains and a good horse to ride. He worried about his sons growing up in a large city. He missed the security of their own home in Circleville and all the things he had grown to love in it.

He become very ill and Iva had to take him home to Circleville. He seem to improve for a while, but then he become unmanageable His wife had no other choice but to put him in the Hospital in Provo. Garth C. Dalton, his son come down to Provo from Ogden, Utah to visit a few times and Rodney G Dalton, one of Martin Jr. Grandsons come to visit him also. His wife went back to Las Vegas to be near her children who had settled there.

Iva Dalton was a devoted wife and she would make the long trip to Provo when she could, along with some of her children to visit with Martin. She worked at many jobs in Las Vegas to help support herself. She took sick in 1960 and died on Oct. 29th, 1960. Her children brought her home to Circleville to stay and she is buried in the Circleville cemetery. On Jan. 29th 1961, Martin Carrell Dalton died in the Provo Hospital and was brought home to the Valley he loved so much.

26- Garth C. Dalton; was the son of Martin C. Dalton Jr. and Sarah Lucinda Iva Veater.

My father **Garth Carroll Dalton;** was born in Circleville, Puute Co. Utah on Sept. 19th 1917 to Martin Carroll Dalton Jr. and Iva Veater Dalton. He started life in a two room log house that was on Main St., which is Highway 89, in the south end of Circleville. This house is still standing in 1999, but has not been lived in for many years. He grew up and went to the local schools that were only a few blocks from his house. The old Piute

High School is across the street from Kent and Stella Whittaker home. He was classmates with his future wife Edith Juanita Fox. Garth and Edith grew up together and their mothers were friends. They all attended the Circleville Ward and also went all through school together and were the same age. They started to date at 15 in high school and went to many dances at school and at the Social Hall. The Social Hall was just east of the Piute High School and is still being used today.

Garth and Edith was married on Aug. 31st 1935 in Panguitch, Utah by Bishop Harold P. Ispson. They were both 18 years old.

Edith Juanita Fox was born on the 24th of Nov. 1917, and was the daughter of George Henry Fox and Ida Menett Nay. Edith lived on a farm on the southeast side of Circleville and had ten brothers and sisters. They were in order of birth:

Edith J. Fox was Baptized on Aug. 3, 1930 and was confirmed a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, by Elder Samuel Rulon Spencer and was witnessed by Christina A. Whittaker and James L. Whittaker. Edith J. Fox was Blessed on Nov. 10th. 1918 at Circleville by Bishop Berry Cameron Jr. With April E. Fullmer as Clerk. Garth C. Dalton was Baptized on Aug. 14th, 1927 by Elder Robert Elwood Dalton and confirmed a member of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints by Bishop Henry Sudsweek and witnessed by Rosa Sudsweek, Clerk.

After Garth and Edith were married they lived with Garth's parents for about 3 years. Garth helped his dad remodel the upstairs attic, so he and Edith could have a place of their own. On April 3rd, 1938 Garth and Edith's first child come into this world. Rodney Garth Dalton was born upstairs in this new apartment. The Doctor had to be called in from Richfield Utah. His name was Doctor Gottferson. Hulda Thomas was the County Nurse that assisted him with Rodney. Note: (Rodney is still sleeping in the same bed he was born in, 60 years later!) Sometime after Rodney was born, Garth bought a home of his own for his family. This house was a very small log cabin with a outhouse out back, and was just around the block; east of the Dalton home, and across the block from Edith's sister Stella's house. Edith Dalton used to make bread for her family in her mother-in-laws kitchen, and her father-in-law, Martin C. Dalton Jr. would come in and grab a few loaves. This would make Edith very mad at him and she would have to make more.

Garth C. Dalton worked for Douglas Cannon for quite a few years as a sheep herder and farm hand. The times was tough on himself and his family because this was the time of the great Depression and there wasn't much work for everyone. Garth joined the Civilian Conservation Corps, trying to make more money. He joined up on June 20th, 1935 and was discharged on Oct. 15th, 1935. His occupation qualification on his application for this job was that of; a teamster, farmer, timber worker and a road builder.

He was at Mount Pleasant, Utah doing soil erosion control, and at camp F-28 doing range improvement. Finally he was at camp F-44 in Escalante, Utah doing road construction. Garth found that he did not like to be away from his family and besides, the job didn't pay good enough. Garth quit the C.C.C. Camps and returned to Circleville. He again went to work for Douglas Cannon until the Fall of 1941.

Garth Dalton heard of a job up north in Salt Lake City at a small arms factory that was hiring people because of the scare of the war in Europe. He traveled to Salt Lake and was hired to go to work at the Dugway Proving Grounds. He sent money down to Circleville to Edith and she packed up little Rodney and took the Trailways bus to Salt Lake to live. The Dalton family lived in a boarding house owned by a Mrs. Steed. The Second World War started on Dec. 7th, 1941 and Garth and Edith returned to Circleville for Christmas of 1941. While in Circleville that holiday season, Garth had a friend named Morris Johnson, who had a friend that was working in Ogden, Utah at the Railroad Yards there. Garth and Morris traveled to Ogden sometime in January of 1942 and were hired on as Firemen on the O.U.R & D Railroad in Ogden. This rail yard was one of the largest in the United States at this time because of all the troops moving across country in troop trains. Again he sent money to Edith for the Long bus ride to Ogden.. (Garth C. Dalton worked at this job until his retirement in 1970.)

Garth and Morris Johnson shared a room in the old Broom Hotel on the corner of 25th street and Wash. Blvd. They only had to walk 4 blocks to go to work on the railroad, which was at the bottom of 25th street.

After Edith and Rodney got to Ogden, Garth found a single room to rent on 25th and Madison Ave.. They were not allowed to cook in this room so they walked through the block to Orchard Ave. to Mrs. Craig's (their landlady) home to eat their meals. Edith did housework and laundry for Mrs. Craig for the rent money.

After a short time on Madison Ave. they moved into an apartment house on 24th and Grant Ave. This was sometime in late 1942. After Garth was at the railroad in Ogden for awhile he bought a small house west of Ogden, about 22nd street on a street named Wilson Lane. This was a small community across the bridge, over the tracks on 24th street. Edith's sister Thelma and her husband Owen Rust lived two doors west, across another set of railroad tracks. While living in Wilson Lane, Garth and Edith's second child was born. Sheila Kay Dalton was born on July



Edith, Rodney & Garth Dalton

19th, 1943 at the old McKay Dee Hospital on Harrison Blvd. and 24th street.

Garth Dalton was now making enough money to buy a larger home in Ogden. They moved into their new home at 3430 Adams Ave. in Oct. of 1945. This house had a large backyard, with a big old cherry tree right in the middle. The Dalton kids played in this tree for many years before it died and had to be removed. Garth had to take a second job to pay for this larger home, and he went to work for Aseal Farr Ice Cream Company, which is located on 21st and Grant Ave. This old and famous Ogden company was founded by John Farr, who was the son of Lorin Farr, the first Mayor of Ogden. It had a very old ice making plant in the rear and made large blocks of ice that they sold to many, many Ogden residents and businesses. This ice making was how John Farr got started, when he used to go to the Ogden River in the winter and saw out large blocks of ice and haul it back to 21st Street to store in a building. This ice was covered with a great amount of straw to keep it from melting. Much later he started to make ice cream to sell to the public. Sometime in 1948 Garth Dalton and a pardoner, Darrell King, bought out the delivery routes from Farris Ice Cream and named their new business Davis County Ice Company. Garth ran the Davis Co. route from Riverdale, and all the way south to Farmington, Utah. His pardoner Darrell run the Weber Co. route delivering ice to many homes and cafe's.



Edith Fox Dalton



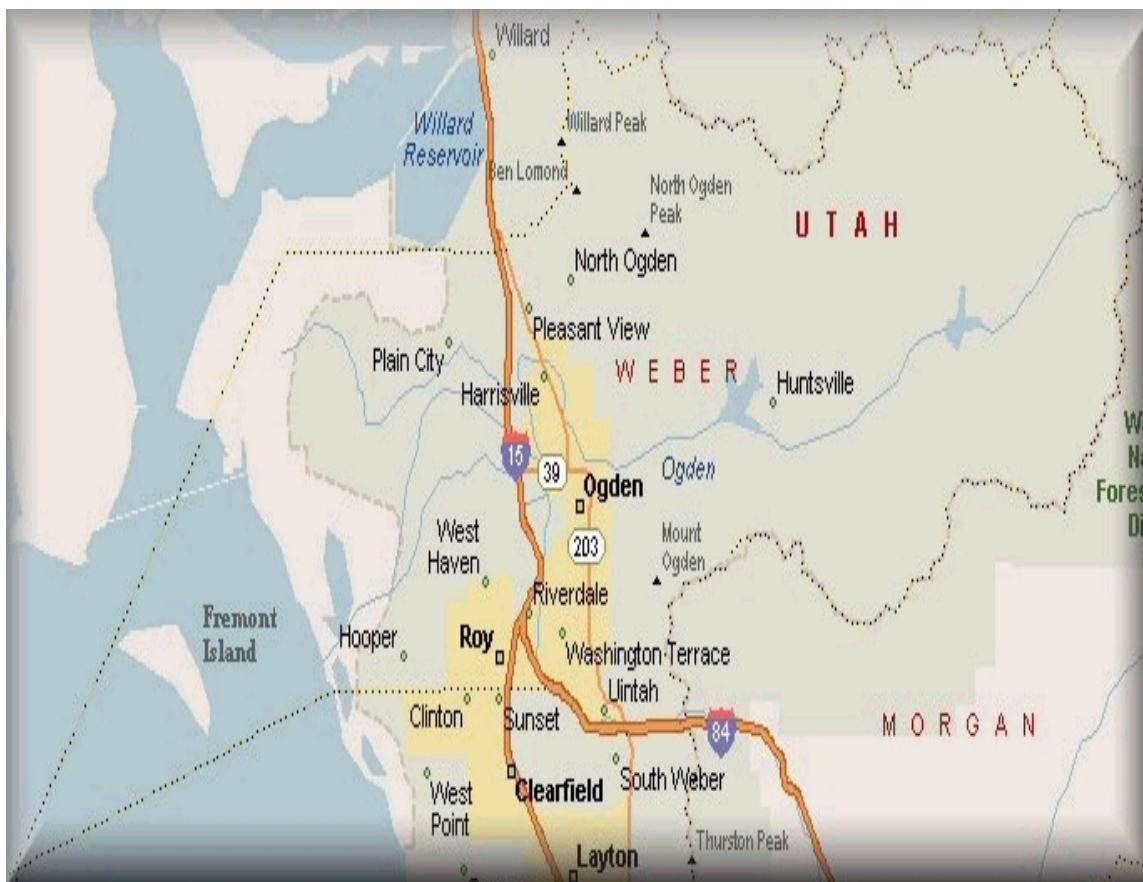
Garth Dalton driving his engine in Ogden Utah

Garth was now working two jobs, and didn't get much sleep, and his growing family didn't get to see much of him. By now Garth and Edith last child was born. They named him, Russell Martin Dalton. Russell was born on July 25th, 1947 in the old McKay Dee Hospital. Edith mostly had to raise her three children alone with Garth being gone most of the time.

Garth was quite a carpenter, and one year he decided to expand the house on Adams Ave. The basement was only half finished, with a large amount of dirt on one side. He and Rodney dug all summer long, before the dirt was all gone. After Garth poured the cement floor, his three kids roller skated around and around on the new floor. This went on for about a year before Garth finished making a new set of rooms downstairs. Rodney and his brother Russell shared a bedroom in this newly remodeled basement for many years until Rodney married and moved out. In about 1959 Garth had to sell his half of Davis County Ice Company. The reason was that almost all his customers had bought modern ice making machines, and his only remaining customers were bars. Edith

decided she needed to go the work, and she had a friend by the name of Ann McBride, who along with her husband Charles, owned a small café named the Park Drive Inn.

Charles McBride worked on the railroad with Garth as a mechanic and they were best friends. This café was directly across the street from the baseball park, home of the Ogden Reds professional baseball club. She started in 1956 as a fry cook and is still working three days a week at the age of 81 in 1999!



Yep! This is were we live

By this time Rodney had married and Sheila and Russell were teenagers and didn't have much time for their father. He built things around the house and was still working nights on the railroad. He finally retired from the O.U.R. & D. Railroad in 1970. Four years later Garth was admitted to the old St. Benedict's Hospital above 30th Street in Ogden two weeks before he died of pneumonia on Oct. 3rd, 1974. He is buried in the Chapel of Flowers Cemetery on 36th Street. in Ogden, Utah .

Next but not last in this Dalton line that goes back to before Jesus Christ was born is me, Rodney Dalton and i was born at 7:15 P.M. April 3rd 1938 in Circleville, Piute County Utah. I am the first son of Garth and Edith Dalton and i have a younger brother, Russell and a sister, Sheila. As you have read in my father's story i was involved in all the history that he lived after i was born. I am going to stop here in this story of the Dal-Ton

family because my history is yet to be written.

This is not the end of this man from Daltonia tale, because there will be many more descendants of this Clan, as they say in Ireland.

The life story of **Rodney Garth Dalton** so far as can be told here!

27- Rodney Garth Dalton; The first son of Garth C. Dalton and Edith Fox.

The autobiography of Rodney Garth Dalton who was born in Circleville, Utah on April 3, 1938, to Garth Carrell Dalton and Edith Juanita Fox. Written and compiled by Rodney G. Dalton.

This story of my life is being put in this Dalton family history book for the benefit of my future descendent's. It's in my own words and my style, so please bear with me. I ask myself why I should write down my life story? I decided that after researching and reading about all my ancestors stories that maybe I should let other people know about my history!

So where do I start? I guess from the day of my birth in the upstairs attic bedroom of my Grandma Dalton's house on the Highway 89 in the middle of Circleville, Utah. It was at 7:15 P.M. Sunday on April 3, 1938.



I was born in the upstairs room of this old house in Circleville

I was the first son of Garth Carrell Dalton and Edith Juanita Fox. The reason I was born in my grandma's house was because my parents didn't own a place of their own at the time. Remember it was at the end of the depression and my dad didn't work much so it was a necessary to have a place to live during those times.

I don't remember us moving into an old log cabin in the middle of Circleville, but I do remember a large china cabinet against one wall. This cabin was one of the early cabins built in Circleville, although it probably was improved on over the years. I think I have a picture of it, but I haven't had a chance to talk to my mom about it. She would not remember anyway.

The next thing I remember is a story my mom tells about me running away to my cousin, Robert Whittaker's house. My mother dressed me in the old style bib overalls, the ones with the straps. She would tie me to the cloth line out front with a rope through my straps and looped it to the cloths wire. Well I wasn't long before I learned how to unbutton my coveralls and run across the street to cousins Roberts house. Problem was I was buck-naked and raised quite a ruckus every time I did it!

I don't remember much about the time we traveled to S.L.C. to finally live or when we moved to Ogden Utah to settle permanently, but this was sometime in early 1942. My mother tells me we first lived in a single room on Madison Ave. & 25th Street. After a few months we moved to an apartment house on the East Side of Grant Ave. and 23rd Street. This is now where the parking garage of the Ogden City Mall is located.

While living on 23rd Street I got my first broken bones. I was playing around some boxes that were being unloaded on the sidewalk in front of a moving company on the same street. Somehow one of my friends pushed over a box on me and it broke both my ankles. Naturally all heck broke loose, and after a trip to the hospital I returned home with a cast from above my knees down. Mom always tells the story about how I would sit on my butt and scoot down the stairs, cast and all. Another time I got myself in big trouble was when me and a friend took off on a little trip across the 24th Street viaduct, which crossed above the Ogden railroad tracks to West Ogden. We were going to find my Dad and ride on his train! We must have been gone for a while because the police picked us up and brought us home.

I next remember we moved to a single house in West Ogden, on a road named "Wilson Lane." It was a white painted house with a few rooms and the outgoing trains run just west of it.

I did start my school days at the "Wilson Lane" school, west of Ogden. I really don't remember very much of those times, so I guess it was a normal experience. One thing I do remember about these times in West Ogden was one time me and my dad were

driving along the 24th street viaduct where it has a exit road off it onto “Wilson Lane” and we slid off the road in the winter time. We weren’t hurt as I recall, but the car was damaged. Another thing that happened at the house in “Wilson Lane” was that my sister, Sheila Kay Dalton was born on July 19, 1943.

Sometime in the fall of 1945 we moved to a home at 3430 Adams Ave. in Ogden, Utah where I spent my school years and where my Mother still lives after 56 years. I have a lot of memoirs of 3430 Adams Ave. It was really all good and normal and I don’t recall any problems while growing up there. Maybe I had good parents who taught me right from wrong. I was 7 years old when I started school at the old Washington Elementary school on 31st and Washington Blvd. It was also a junior high, which was added onto to the old elementary section. The old building was built before 1900 and had 3 floors. After I finished up elementary I transferred to the newer junior high building.

The house on Adams Ave. only had a half basement so my dad decided to dig out the back section and put bedrooms in. I remember helping him dig dirt and loading it into an old pickup he had brought from his work. We filled in a lot of low places around the property. He poured a new cement floor and after it cured us kids would roller skate around and around. It seemed like it took quite a few years for dad to finally finish the 2 bedrooms and one bath down stairs. I was the first one to have my own bedroom. My brother Russell was born in July of 1947 and after a time he moved into my bedroom until I got married and moved away.

I remember a lot about my growing up in the house on 34th Street. There were a lot of good times had there. Christmas at our house was really good, we kids getting most of the things we asked for, within reason of course. Mom would always put a sheet across the large doorway going into the front room where the presents were put around the tree. But that didn’t stop us from getting up early to take a peek.

I remember the winter of 1947/48 was one of the heaviest in Ogden’s history. The snow stayed on the streets from December to March. I remember that it was so high that there was at times a tunnel from our front door to the street! But again I was not that tall, ok. Boy was that good sledding everywhere. The best was on 31st, where the street goes up for 2 blocks. The city would sometimes block off the street for all the kids to sleigh ride. I remember there was a lot of crashes at the bottom. I also was very good at making snow figures from all the snow we had. Somewhere mom has some pictures of these.

My school days were ok for me because I somehow worked my way into the friendship of the tougher kids in school so I wasn’t bullied around much. I think this prepared me for later life because I could take care of my self in bad situations.

I was actually the leader of our small “Gang” that palled around together in my neighborhood and we were typical kids growing up in the late 40’s and early 50’s. We never did anything to get into trouble, because we knew better. Well maybe there was a few times I got myself in a jam. For Christmas one year I got a “Red Ryder” BB gun.

Well I then was bored or something because our next-door neighbors who had two older boys raised pigeons in their back yard. There was a ton of them always on our telephone pole in the alleyway, yep! I shot at a few from my bedroom window. Somehow I got caught one day and wow there was no more BB gun for me. I can’t remember if I in fact hurt one of them, but I knew not to do it again. Another time I think there was a little corner grocery store just up the street on Adams Ave. and 35th Street. One day I was up there with my friends and stole a candy bar. Well as luck would have it my mom caught me eating it and put two & two together and marched me right back to the store and paid for it. It was very embarrassing to say the least. Believe it or not I was a pretty good kid. But naturally I won’t tell you about my normal teenage years!

One way I had fun was to get the gang and take very long bike rides all over the south end of Ogden. In the summer time I think that’s all we did, except to play baseball which, I will tell about later. There used to be an old Army & Navy yard on the other side of the railroad tracks on the other side of Wall Ave. about where 30th Street was. I think it was part of the first storage yard for the Smith & Edwards Company that is still in business in the North West Side of Ogden today. Well we would go out there on the West End of this yard and there was a hole somewhere in the fence and we played with all the good Army war stuff that was there. I really don't think anybody took things, because we didn’t want to get in trouble - a far cry from today’s kids! There was also a very large set of sand dunes just west of this army yard we used to play on. It would later become part of the Ogden City dump.

My summer trips to Circleville:

Let’s now hear about my trips to Circleville during the summers when my Mother shipped me down to Circleville during school summer vacation. I was only about 12 at the time. I made this trip for about 3 years in a row, I think. She would drive me to the Greyhound bus station on 25th and Grant Ave. in Ogden and put me on the bus to Circleville. Most times some old lady would watch over me during the trip, including the stop for lunch at Nephi. Ken Dalton would watch for the bus because my Mother would telephone ahead to tell someone that I was coming. I would get off the bus at Ken’s and he would greet me with a big hello! As I remember he always walked me to the pop cooler for a cold pop. I always had a “Nehi” grape. He let me read his funny books for awhile until he called my Aunt Stella to tell her I had arrived safely. I then walked around the corner and up the street a half block to her house. I was there for the summer to “Work” on the farm with my cousins on Uncle Kent Whittaker’s Farm.

Wow, did I hate that, city boy you know.

Anyway, on Saturday afternoons, I would stay at my Aunt Verda Applegate's house overnight for the weekends. Actually this was what you called a "Basement" house. As I remember there was never a top floor constructed. I also remember she had a shoe repair shop connected onto the side of this house and she would show me how she re-soled shoes. I thought that was great that my Aunt would know how to do that! I also remember she had a big old black stove in that shop, I thought that was a big deal too. I don't remember my Uncle Bart too well, although I did know he owned a cold storage store, on the south side of Circleville. I remember my cousins, Don and Blaine Applegate. Don was older than me and had joined the Navy. Blaine was about 2 years older than I was and he took me around to see some of the sights of Circleville.

I remember one time we went behind someone's house into the pea patch and filled a big gunnysack with fresh green peas, boy were they good. Boy did we get sick!

Another time I remember was when us cousins, Robert Whittaker, Blaine Applegate and myself, walked to Grandpa Fox's farm, about 3 miles away to get some of Grandma Fox's homemade bread. She was famous for this bread. Nobody was there at the time so we found our way into the kitchen and found what we were looking for. A good yelling at when she found out! How did she find out it was us? Here's how. We also dug a hole beside the front fence in the side yard. We filled it over with some planks lying around the place. We ate the bread down in the hole, why, I guess to hide, as young boys will do. Anyway we had to get home and just left the wood over the hole. Yep, a calf came along and fell in and we were caught! Grandpa Fox called his daughter, Stella and wow, did we get it! Anyway that's how I remember it.

When I stayed at my cousin, Robert's house, we had to get up around 4:00 A.M. and get up for the biggest breakfast I ever had. Even my dear Mom didn't have this much food! Then it was off to the farm out on Hi-way 89 towards Junction. My job was to drive the tractor that pulled the hay wagon. No fancy or modern equipment in them days! This was about 1950, I think. Anyway I will always remember the hot and miserable time I had doing this, but I couldn't let my Cousins and Uncle's think this "City" boy couldn't do "Farm" work. After all I was a "Dalton", right! The reason I am afraid of snakes to this day is because of all the water snakes that got baled up in the hay bales and my Uncle Kent and Cousin Robert would pull them out of the bales and throw them at me while I was driving that damn tractor!

Homemade bread and honey! Wow! A good yelling at when she found out! How did she find out it was us? Here's how. We also dug a hole beside the front fence in the side yard. We filled it over with some planks lying around the place. We ate the bread down in the hole, why, I guess to hide, as young boys will do. Anyway we had to get home

and just left the wood over the hole. Yep, a cow came along and fell in and we were caught! Grandpa Fox called his daughter, Stella and wow, did we get it! Anyway that's how I remember it. I also remember I met a whole mess of Dalton's during the good time's I had during my summer trips to Circleville in my early years. I wish I had kept in touch with them, because today I would sure like to ask them what they remembered about the early days about my ancestors in my hometown of Circleville!

My life in Little League Baseball and my dream to make take the big Leagues:

Yep! I do believe with a little bit of luck and a change of my attitude back there then, I could have made it! I really was that good. I was picked on many all-star teams while I was playing baseball around the Ogden area. I remember that my gang was always at the ball park named, John Athletic Park on the west side of Wall Ave. between 31st and 35th Street. It had a very large area with a big field to the north where the big tent circus always set up during most summers. There was to the south of this field the Baseball Park and to the south of this ballpark, the very good all fenced in Softball Park. The middle section was the home of the Ogden Reds baseball club. I remember watching the famous Frank Robinson play the outfield there. So why did I grow up as the Brooklyn Dodgers as my big League team? This park was also where the L.A Dodgers and the Oakland A's used during their Pioneer League days. I got to see all the future baseball stars, including Tommy Lasada who managed the Dodgers for a year there. I would eventually get to know the bat boys and the club house guys and they sometimes let me go in after a game, wow, was I in the big time!

I was a very fast runner and the outfield fence had 2 x 4's that you could stand on when the game was on. Well I always collected a big bucket of new baseballs that were hit over the center & left field fence. I was as good as anybody getting to the balls first!

I remember trying out for the Junior high team and I was really nervous at the time and as luck would have it was a bad day for me and the coach cut me. Well that made me mad and then and there I swore to show him I could play as well as anybody. I joined a little League team and become the best as I could. The problem was that, as it turned out that I was a little shy and I never again wanted to try out for my schools baseball teams. I did over the years in the Ogden City Leagues get to play with a few friends that did in fact make it to the big leagues. I can't recall their names but I guess i lived my dreams through them. I remember the last time I had a chance to make it in the minors. The Pittsburgh Pirates baseball team come through Ogden one year during my senior year and had a try out camp at the Ogden ballpark. I did very well and as I recall it they ask two others and me if we wanted to go to Arizona to the next camp. Well again I was too young or scared, because I didn't go. End of dream! I did go on to play a few years in the Utah State semi-pro league that was very strong at the time. I do remember I stopped playing when I started working for the White Motor Company that started to

build semi- trucks here in Ogden in 1973, more on this job later. Oh ya, I was asked to form a Company fast pitch softball team a few years later which, started me on a new hobby that took all my time until I was 50 years old.

My “Hot Rod” Cars:

Let’s talk now about my love of cars and good old fashion drag racing. This started way back probably around the time I was 13 or 14 when I started to buy some of the first car books that just started to be published. I collected all I could get my hands on.

All through grade and high school I had a best friend named Jack Allen who was far shyer than me so we made a good pair. He was a Chevy man and I was a Ford man and we argued long and hard which was the better car. As it turned out I was the one who joined the local car club in Ogden even before I had a drivers license. The name of this club was the “Salt Kings” and they were formed by a bunch of airman from Hill Air Force Base just south of Ogden. With their connections they got Ogden City to help move an old barracks building onto a piece of land owned by the city that was north of the Airport entrance. We club member’s remodeled the building with 4 garage doors and a meeting room to meet every week. A few years later I was elected president of the club. I learned a bunch of stuff about cars and how they worked and because of this I got hooked big time on “CARS.” Naturally I had it in my mind that if you owned a car you had to fix it up or “Customize” it to look like the cars in the car books we bought. Remember all this started first in Southern California.

Over the years I build a few custom and drag race cars. There are pictures of three of these cars at the end of this chapter. I won many trophies with these cars, but it was a very expensive hobby with nothing to show for it but “Pride.” After High school, with a few good buddies we traveled to Southern California to watch the big time drag races. That started me on many trips to California over the years.

One time we were in California was in the summer of 1955. Well there was a new park that had just opened in Los Angeles that was named “Disney Land” We got to go see it when it was brand new, a great time! Well anyway I didn’t stop fixing up my cars and trucks until I bought my last new truck in 1993, a Ford Ranger.

I remember my very first job was delivering newspapers for the SL Tribune. I don’t think it lasted too long because I couldn’t get out of bed on time. My next job was as a stock boy at the Rainbow Market that was on the Northwest Corner of 34th Street & Washington Blvd. There is a Arby’s now at this location. After that I got a job at the new “May Fair” market on the South West corner of 36th Street and Harrison Blvd. It turned into one of the famous Smith Food stores. This led me to my next job at the Ogden Coca-Cola Bottling Company.

At the Mayfair market I was the stock boy who filled the pop shelves and I always seemed to make the Coca-Cola section look the best. It just so happened that the route manager of the Coke Co. was a man by the name of Jack Hartman and one day he thanked me for doing so good at stocking his products and ask if I wanted to work at the Coca-Cola Co. after school loading trucks. Of course I said yes, and that's what started me on my "soda water" career.

I first loaded trucks and to say the least it was hard work, I stuck it out and finally got to fill in on the bottling line in the summers. After a while they let me run extra Coke to the route drivers during the day and I was back stocking shelves at the grocery stores in Ogden and Davis County. Next I started to fill in for route drivers that took vacations and I learned most of the routes that the Coke Co. had. The trucks that the Company used were really old, being 1940 Fords, pug-nosed, cab over the engine, oily, hot and noisy junk! Well that's how I remember them.

I had many learning experiences while delivering coke around Ogden. One route I run was on 25th Street. Now remember this was about 1956 and the street still had most of the buildings opened for business. It was a mix of all races and I had to deal with doing my job. Sometimes it was scary going into the bars and restaurants that lined the street. That where I learned to get in and out as fast as I could and I think it helped me on my later jobs to get things done fast.

My High School years:

Ogden High school is where I hung out for a few years. The reason I say I just hung is because I was only an average student and I didn't want to be there. To say the least I hated it. Ogden High is located on 28th St. and Harrison Blvd. and it's a famous building in Ogden. In my sophomore year I had the choice of sports or R.O.T.C. as one of my classes. The Army always intrigued me, so I signed up for it. It was the only class that I received straight "A's." The first years I was on the Rifle team and was a Sargent. My junior year I was a Lieutenant and in charge of the Drill team. My senior year I was chosen the Captain of "A" company and was in Headquarters Company. I passed all the army tests with a 100% average and in my senior year I past the same test they give to the men that sign up for the Officers school in the regular army with 97 %. I was told I qualified for a scholarship to the Utah University in the R.O.T.C. But again I made the wrong decision and didn't take it for many reasons, which I will explain.

The problem was I had a hard time staying in class because I had my hot rod car and a girl friend in Davis High School in Layton, Utah. Turned out it was in my last term in my senior year and I was failing a few classes. They called my mother and me into the councilor's office to talk with us. He explained that there was one teacher that would

not give me any make up tests and I would have to attend summer school to graduate. Well that did it for me. I remember to this day how I walked out of his office, through the big front doors and down the stairs and into my future! I remember that my dad felt bad for me and the night that my class graduated, he took me out to dinner at the Park Drive Inn café.

My first car:

Let me tell you about my first car or “hot rod” if you will. I sometime worked on weekends for my dad who owned the “Davis County Ice Company.” The deal we had was that I could keep all the profits I made the day I delivered ice for him as long as I paid for the next day’s load. It was just after I received my drivers license and it was in the summer time between my sophomore and junior year. The car was a 1949 dark red Ford Convertible with a white top. It was only a couple of years old and was in great shape. I can’t remember where I bought it from, except it was off a car lot in downtown Ogden. A picture is enclosed. This car was customized within days at the “Salt Kings” clubhouse at the Ogden City Airport. I only had this car for about a year because one winter me and the boys were riding around Ogden and I tried to go over a curb in a church parking lot in Ogden and it wrecked the frame so bad it was lost. Reason? To low to the ground!

My second car was really the same car, but the next year model of Ford. A 1950 Ford Convertible. It had a black interior with a black and bronze paint job. Again it was customized!

The year I owed the 1949 Ford, I was somewhat the “Leader of the Pack” as the song says. There was a drive-in café at the intersection of 36th Street and Riverdale Road named “Al’s Greenwells” The name was taken from a green brick round well that was on the corner of the property. There was one parking spot between this well and the street. It was mine! Nobody was allowed to park there except me. From that hangout we conducted our business and many nights of drag races took place on Riverdale Road in front of our hangout

My third car was a one-year-old white Ford hardtop with a black interior. Ya! It too was customized. I just could not help myself.

My fourth car was a brand new 1959 Chevrolet, 2-door hardtop, white with bright red interior. My brother-in-law and I went out to the Olsen Chevrolet Motor Co. in Layton, Utah and ordered brand new cars! He ordered a black one and I a white one. It was hell waiting for the phone-call that they were ready to be picked up. You can guess how long it took me to customize it. Both cars were what you called factory hot rods and finally I had a car that was one of the fastest ones in Ogden. It made my reputation, good or bad. And so went my early car years!

These early “Hot Rod” years were a good learning experience for me because it led me into my lifetime work as being a industrial painter, which then trained me to be a supervisor & manager of a few local paint business’ in Ogden.

First marriage:

It was after high school and I was working for the Coca-Cola Company that I met and finally married my first wife. Her name was Carol Thomas and she lived on the same block of Adams Ave. Her house was on the corner of 34th St. on the West Side. I was 3 years older than her and I was a few years out of high school when we finally started to date. I do remember her growing up in the Adams Ave. neighborhood, but I didn’t pay attention to her until I came back to Ogden after one of my many summer trips to California. One day feeling bored or something, we rounded up my best friend, Jack Allen and his girl friend, Mary Ann and we all went to Elko, Nevada. Carol Thomas and I were married in the Courthouse. The Date was May 28, 1961. Mary Ann was a first cousin of Carol’s and my friend Jack married her one-year later. My son Scott Rodney Dalton was born on Sept. 7, 1961.

We moved into an apartment somewhere in the middle of Ogden for about two years before we bought a house in Washington Terrace in South Ogden. I was making really good money working at the Coke Company and Carol was a telephone operator for the phone co. Everything was ok for a couple of years but then things went haywire. I was too busy spending money on my show car and drag racing hobby and Carol didn’t like most of my friends. I won’t go into the details but we were divorced shortly after. It messed me up for a long time afterwards.

I moved back to my bedroom at 3430 Adams Ave. and was still driving a Coke truck. I was not happy with my job at the time and started to look for another job. There was an opening with the Royal Crown Cola Bottling Co. and I changed jobs. Probably a bad move because as it turned out I could have retired early as did all my fellow Coke route drivers did. I still was making good money working for Royal Crown Cola Co. and I was also building a big time race car, which took up much of my time.

Second marriage:

In the mean time I was dating a girl by the name of Evelyn Horrocks and going to car shows around the west. She lived with her mother above Monroe on 27th Street in Ogden and she was 11 years younger than me.

Turns out she became my second wife as we were married on Feb. 6, 1965 in Las Vegas, Nevada.

Sometime in the spring of 1965 there was an opening with Royal Crown Cola Co. in SLC for a service repairman. We moved to SLC and rented an apartment in a duplex on the West Side. It was only a few months later that my boss at Royal Crown was fired and I was promoted into his job as the service Dept. Manager. This started me on a long history of being "The Boss" in my future jobs. In my years with Royal Crown I also ended up as the Maintenance Manager and as an assistance-bottling supervisor. At the time I thought this would be my life time career job, but it didn't turn out to be.

It was sometime in 1967 that the parent company of Royal Crown Cola decided to experiment with leasing the vending machine section of all their bottling plants to private operators. My best friend at the time was a man by the name of Dale Shelden. He was a route manager at the time and he ask if we could lease all the pop vendors and the trucks it would take to run the routes. We made the deal with them and set up our own company we called D& S Distributing Co. We rented a back section of the Royal Crown lot that had a building on it with a gate exiting 9th South and we were on our way. I run the entire South vending route and Del ran the North Route. Now to explain just how big our area was, consider this. It was for all of the state of Utah!

The vending machines we had to deliver pop to, cans and bottles were everywhere, service stations, hospitals, office buildings, stores, etc; We took over the contracts on the vending machines that the customers had purchased on time and we collected the payments due us. Sometimes this was a problem to make some of these people pay on time, but most were ok. My route took me as far south as Nephi and as far west as the Dugway Proving Grounds and every place in-between! I also had to do part time duty as a vendor repairman, this was a 12-14 hours day, but I owned my own business and I was on my way up. I still had time to show my cars & drag race around the west. I won a lot of trophies and a good time was had by all.

Part of the reason we did well was because the Royal Crown Co. sold us soda water at wholesale prices and we could charge our customers what we wanted to. This helped us because we could cut our rate per case to sell a ton of cans to a lot of stores and special outlets. Every 2 weeks or so, Hill Air Force base would call an order a truck load of canned pop for their Lakeside base on the West Side of Great Salt Lake. Now I don't have to tell you that the profit on this load at about \$1.10 wholesale per case and then selling it retail at maybe \$2.10 per case was a great profit!

Every thing was going great for us until the parent company looked at our great increase in sales and wanted part of the profits. The next time our lease was due for renewal, they increased the wholesale price of their products to a level they we could not live with. We hired a lawyer to look at this and he advised us not to resign our lease. Well to make a long story short, they sued us and we sued them!

As it finally turned out we had them over a barrel because after all we were employees of theirs when they signed the first lease and we settled out of court, the only cost to us was our own lawyer's cost. The best part was that the judge told the Royal Crown Co. they had to give us our old jobs back. That's when I become an assistance production manager.

It was during this time that I lived in SLC that I built my best custom show car which, was also a drag racer. It was a 1956 Chevy 2-door that I had owned for about 5 years. Someone stole it one night from in front of my mother's house in Ogden and the police chased them down Washington Blvd. They finally wrecked it!

Completely totaled. This car at the time was a custom car and was legal to drive on the street. I towed it back to SLC and started to rebuild it, with the idea of making it the best show & drag racer there was. It took me 4 long years and almost \$25,000 to finish with me doing all the work. I won many trophies with it. We toured all over the West showing this car.

It was about this time that my daughter, Kristina Louise was born on May 1, 1972 in the Mckay Dee hospital in Ogden, Utah. We had moved back to Ogden after I went back to work for Royal Crown. At the time we lived just across the street from Lorin Farr Park next to the Ogden City stadium on 18th Street. I remember that my daughter Kristi always wanted to go across the street to play on the rides that the park had there for many years. We had some good times.

I think it was sometime in 1972 that the bottling plant in SLC was sold to a man from Idaho Falls Idaho named George Cope and he closed down his Idaho plant and came to SLC to produce Royal Crown Cola. He bought a big semi-truck and trailer to ship soda water to his Idaho Falls warehouse and I took a few loads up. Let me tell you about one time that he hired a new truck driver for that Idaho truck. This was when the new freeway was being built through Centerville and there was a detour along the frontage road to the east. Well one morning this new driver somehow lost control and tipped the truck and his load of thousands of cases of 16 oz. Royal Crown Cola over onto its side in a horse field beside of the road. Now do you know what that many bottles of 16 oz. soda water does when it is broken! Yes it makes a very big river of soda water & broken glass. Well we had to close down the bottling line and take everyone to Centerville with gloves and drums and it took us two days to clean up the mess. The owner of the field was mad as hell and I'm sure it cost the owner a good bit of money to make him happy.

About a year later the owner installed a brand new bottling machine and over expanded to the point that he had to take out bankruptcy. Now this was a shady situation that I will tell you about. He called all his managers into his office one day and informed us that he was going to move his operation back to Idaho Falls and he wanted as many of

us to help him. Well naturally we didn't have jobs so almost all of his employees walked out on him. He then said he would pay about a \$1,000 dollars each to anyone who would help him strip the new bottling equipment out that weekend and ship it to Idaho Falls. I was one of the ones to take him up on the offer. We did move everything we could that weekend and as luck would have it he offered me the job as the production line manager in Idaho Falls. I was the one that had put the new machine together in SLC and he knew I would do him a good job. I said yes to his offer and I moved into the local Motel 6 in Idaho Falls. I worked four day's straight to get us back in production. My wife came up a few time to visit and I went to Ogden also to visit. The Owner offered me the Production Managers job, but by then I had decided that Idaho was not for me. I told him that I was moving back to Ogden, he was not pleased.

I wasn't long out of a job because one of my friends that I worked with at Royal Crown had a brother that was the production manager at Fruehauf Trailer Manufacturing in SLC. He needed a painter to replace one that he needed to run the night shift and to replace the paint supervisor that was retiring soon. I was still good at painting because I had learned to paint cars during the time I was building my show and race cars. I also helped build some of the new trailers and I was learning more about how to build large trucks and trailers which helped me get my next job back in Ogden in Nov. of 1973.

The White Motor Company:

I had read in the local newspaper that the White Motor Company of Cleveland, Ohio was going to open a large Semi-Truck manufacturing plant in West Ogden on 31st, St. They were going to open up a office in Ogden to take applications and they would announce where it would be later. I did not wait for this because I wanted to get the jump on everyone else. I wrote directly to the White Motor Co. in Cleveland and asked for a application. I filled it out with all my qualifications and sent it back to them. One day in late November I got a call for an interview and I was the one they wanted for the job of Paint Supervisor! I was one of about 8 line supervisors to be hired and we reported to the West Ogden plant to be trained. They told us they were going to send us to their White Western Star manufacturing plant in Kelowna, British Columbia Canada for training. Two days later we were on a plane there. It was great fun to have all expenses paid and it was great. I was there for one month and come home the weekend after two weeks. After we returned home to hire the men needed to build trucks, they sent me to Cleveland, Ohio for more training in the Paint Dept. there. Now that was the oldest place I have ever been in. It was spread out over many blocks and some of the buildings were built in the early 1900's. After three days in Cleveland they flew me to Toledo, Ohio to the Dupont Paint mixing school. I was there for two days and then come home to start my new job. Well White Motor was a long and hard job because it had about 500 employees at its biggest years. I was one of the best supervisors there because I was always ahead of my production schedule.

The model of truck we built was called the “White Western Star” that was also build in Canada. It was a heavy-duty truck mainly used in the logging business in the North West. It was a long nose with heavy steel fenders and I think we made about 5 per week.

Some time about 1976 the company introduced a new cab over truck that was selling well and was moved from Cleveland to Ogden. They decided to give the customer an option on the paint that was a full cab decal with a mountain scene. The company flew one of my men and me to Michigan for training on how to apply this decal. We were there for a week. We started to make these new trucks and they were a big hit. There was a truck show in Reno, Nevada and they sent me there to apply some decals on the show trucks.

Again my bad luck was running true to form, because after a few years the White Motor Company of Cleveland Ohio went bankrupt! But it turned out ok because the Volvo Motor Company was looking for a manufacturing plant out west to build their Volvo Semi-Trucks. We didn't miss a beat and this company expanded the operation to eventually to 15 trucks of the end of the line per day.

Well as my luck would have it again I was never at home enough to maintain a good marriage. I don't think it was anyone's fault but my wife was married far too early and didn't have much freedom. We had her mother living with us in a bedroom down stairs, and our daughter was about 5 or 6 and I was never home to help out. She was working at her own job so the money was not an issue. One day I came home and she asked for a divorce! Another blow to my ego. I moved back to my mother's house and did nothing but work and sleep for about three months. I didn't start to socialize until the secretaries at work took pity on me and invited me out. To say the least, I turned into a party animal.

After I was a paint supervisor for a few years the company expanded production and a job opened up for a production general foreman. I got the job because of my good record as a supervisor. I managed over 250 people for three years and this was how I learned how to cope with being a manager of people! Wow what a problem that was, more baby setting than anything.

After a while because of parts shortages on the line there was about 600 trucks parked in the fields around the plant. Well there was unlimited overtime and I was required to be there as much as I could. I was working 14/15 hours a day and only had a day off every few weeks. I once worked 41 straight days without a day off and that was only because it was the 4th of July and the whole plant was closed down! Not much of a home life but I was making enough money that we bought a home just below Monroe Blvd. on

34th street.

After 8 years with the White Motor Co. I had an opportunity to take a job as the paint and production supervisor with the Kremco Company out of Edmonton Canada. Best job I ever had! They were going to build what you call “work over oil rig moveably vehicles” at a new manufacturing plant on 25th St. in West Ogden, where the present FMC Company is. Some of the White Motor managers had already gone to work there and they called me for an interview. Naturally I got the job. One reason I quit White Motors was because Kremco was new and my friends managed there. They shipped me off to Edmonton, Canada for training, in Nov. of 1981, I think it was. It was just getting cold there and sometimes we had to go outside and climb to the top of an oil rig mast. Over 300 feet tall on a ladder only 14” wide, but I did it! Another time I went to Edmonton was during the winter of 1982, Feb. I think it was. We had to circle the airport during a snowstorm that was one of the biggest in history there. After what seemed like hours, we landed far away from the terminal. They had to bus us there! The airport was closed down because the roads into it were closed because of the heavy snow. The terminal was filled with people and as I remember it I had to stay there for hours until the roads were open.

As my luck would have it again the worldwide oil shortage in 1983/4 caused the Kremco Company to go bankrupt! We had to finish up the last oil rig and get it ready to ship out. I was one of about 20 employees left. We started to make any steel product we could to keep the doors open. The boss told us all that if we found another job to take it because he didn’t know how long we could stay open. An old boss of mine called me from a little burg in Lamar, Colorado near the Kansas and Oklahoma border to offer me a job as the paint supervisor in a tour bus manufacturing plant that had just opened. It was a German Bus and was selling well in the USA. I had nothing to lose because he offered me good money to relocate with all expense paid. I went there and they put me up in the local motel and paid for my room for one month, or until I found a place to live. As it turned out the only place to live was in a boarding house 45 miles away and there was nothing to do there but watch the sage brush blow by! I only had 4 white men working for me and all the others were Mexicans that could not speak English. That was enough for me, and I decided to go back to Ogden after only three days. I told my boss the job was not for me and walked out the front door, directly to my motel room, packed my stuff and hit the road! I called my old boss at Kremco and he hired me back and I stayed there for another two years.

Painting the nuclear rocket launcher for the B-1 bomber:

One day I got a call from an old White Motor buddy who was the chief inspector on a missile project at Thiokol in Box Elder. He wanted me to help him out of a jam. We met the next day at Kremco and talked about me painting the Rocket Launcher that went

into the Air Force's B-1 bomber. What happened was that they had tried to paint the first one's themselves at Thiokol and they were not accepted by the Air Force. They had to be repainted. Problem was that Kremco was still in bankruptcy and Thiokol would not give them the work. That didn't stop me though. I called a buddy of mine who owned a steel fabrication business and asked him to meet with Thiokol. He liked what they had to offer and we rented a building in the Ogden Industrial Park and set up a paint booth that Thiokol paid for. The new job was named American Western Steel Co., Rocket Division. I hired a helper and within three years I had painted 206 of these highly technical weapons. I did not miss a beat and didn't have to repaint one!

Again my luck run out on a job. American Western Steel took out bankruptcy 6 months after the rocket painting contact ran out.

Let's talk about one of my other hobbies during this time. After I had stopped playing baseball and starting working for White Motor Co. I was asked to play and coach the company Fast Pitch softball team. We formed a team made up of only company employees and played in the Ogden City Wednesday night league. This was a class "C" league and we did well and some years won our league. When I changed jobs and went to Kremco I found a sponsor and formed my own Fast pitch team. We traveled around the state and entered many weekend tournaments, won quite a few of them too. I also took time to coach a girls slow pitch team, but one year was enough for me.

The year was about 1985 and the Coca-Cola Fast Pitch team gave me a call to coach and play for them. Probably because I had beat them quite a few times in the past. We hand picked a few of the best players in Ogden and had a try out early in the spring. We went to St. George to play in their annual spring Fast Pitch Tournament and won it! That was the start of my big time involvement in Championship Fast Pitch softball.

The World Series of softball:

We continued to add better players and won many, many games and tournaments. We traveled all over the West playing softball, and won the St. George tournament three years in a row. The big year for my team was in 1986 when we won the Utah State ISC Championship and qualified for the World Series of Softball in Sioux City Iowa. We were allowed to pick up three players from other teams and I asked three of the best players in Ogden to go. Naturally the Coca-Cola Company paid for the trip as they had been for these years.

This ICS World Softball Tournament has been played for many years and it was the high light of my life to be able to play in it. The problem was at the time our team was only a class "A" team and most of the others were the best in the World, or "Major" class teams.

That was fine with us, because we were there. My luck held out again and we drew out the very first game which, is the opening ceremony game. When I say luck, I mean bad because the team we had to play was the Host team from Sioux City named Penn Corp. They just happened to be the No. 1 ranked team in the World, we didn't care! There were 52 teams qualified from the USA, Canada, Mexico and Japan.

Penn Corp. had the top pitcher from New Zealand and he started for them. I guess you knew what happen then, he no-hit us! We did get a few foul balls off him but he was throwing about 98 to 100 miles per hour from 46 feet away and there were a ton of strike- outs. The score was only 4 to 0, so It wasn't that bad. As I remember it was on a Friday night at 7:30 and there were about 10,000 fans in the stands, including the governor and the mayor. Wow! I have a big scrapbook on this.

This loss put us into the loser's bracket and we didn't get to play until Sunday. The team we played was from Texas and they were not as good as the first team. Problem was they still were good enough to beat us 7-0 and knock us out of the tournament. We did get three hits off them, but our errors killed us. We flew back to Utah that next Tuesday. After that year we still won a lot of games and tournaments and almost won the Utah State Tournament again in 1987. We went 12 innings only to lose 3 to 4, which was a heart breaker. I coached the team for a few more years before it was no fun. I was talked into coaching the Petersen's slow pitch team for a few years. (Petersen's is my present employer) I did form another fast pitch team and we played in the Clinton City league for about 4 years before I gave it up for good, I was over 55 years old by then! So ended another hobby before my last one started. Can you guess what that hobby is? Right, searching for that old rascal, "Thomas Dalton."

After I left American Western Steel I applied for a paint supervisor job at a large family owned business in Farr West, Utah, which is Northwest of Ogden. They hired me because they were looking for an experienced person that could bid on government contracts. I have been working at Petersen Inc. from Oct. 28th 1988 to the present day.

Married again:

I will now tell about my last and third wife. I married Tracy Lindsey on June 1, 1991, in Ogden, Utah. I was 51 and she was 27 at the time. Now before you start asking questions about this age difference, I will just say that all my wives have been quite a few years younger than me! We went on many vacation's together and I was always remodeling our houses. Over these years that I was married to Tracy we bought many cars and I build us a new home in October of 2003. We have had no children. We had a great life until she devolved brain Cancer in the summer of 2002. She had three brain operations and was in the hospital many, many times. She lived until January, 29th 2005.

I arranged for her to have a very large funeral that many people attended. She is buried in the Dalton family graveside on 36th street in Ogden.

OBITUARY:

Tracy Lindsey Dalton, 41 returned to her heavenly father on January 29 2005 after a long and courageous 3-year battle with brain cancer.

She was born December 21, 1963 in Ogden Utah, the oldest of six children of Kent Lindsey and Brenda Davis. She lived all her life in Roy Utah until her marriage. She graduated from beauty school and became a beautician and makeup artist. Tracy taught dance at the Dance Shoppe of Roy, Utah.

She loved dancing, music, reading and children. She loved making professional quality crafts. Though Tracy had no children of her own she loved and cared for her brothers, sisters and her nieces and nephews. All children could find a warm place in Tracy's heart and home.

Tracy married Rodney Dalton on June 1 1991. This was a classical May-December romance, She loved to travel with her husband, and redecorate her home. She was a member of the Harrisville 4th LDS ward.

Surviving are her husband Rodney, Ogden; her best friend "Brindle"; Grandmothers Edith Dalton and Edna Lindsey, Ogden; Brother-in-law; Russell Dalton, South Ogden; Sister-in-law Sheila Gerrard, Roy; Step daughter Kristy (Kevin) Dean, Roy; Mother Brenda (Myron) Davis, Roy; Father Kent (Linda) Lindsey, North Ogden; Sisters Terri (Mike) Eppich, Murray; Toni (Josh) Hohl, Harrisville; Tricia (Kip) Casper, North Ogden; Brothers Travis Lindsey, Roy; Tyler Lindsey, Salt Lake; Step sisters Michele Shimmin, Murray; Nickie (Lance) Miles, Eugene Oregon; Dee dee (Casey) Clough, Riverdale; Shaundra Davis, Mountain Green; Step brothers Jared Dimick, North Ogden; Shane Davis, Salt Lake.

She was preceded in death by a Step-son, Scott (Dalton) Welch, Ogden; 2 Grandfathers; Boyd Lindsey, and Verner Stoddard. One Grandmother; Dorothy Stoddard, all of Carbon County Utah.

About my getting started on genealogy:

It was about 1998 that my son Scott asked about his Dalton ancestors. I had about 20 years before I found a small amount about them and had saved my notes. After reading the notes, something caught my eye, and I remembered that there was a book about the Dalton's in my local LDS Family History Center. I went there, and guess what? It was

about my family of Dalton's. Wow! Did I think I had hit a gold mine, wrong, the book was in fact the "John Dalton book of Genealogy." Sure that was enough for most researcher, but not to me. I had just purchased my first home computer and I knew that there were a lot of genealogy web sites out there. I started to enter the surname Dalton in as many as I could find. Well after a time I started to find and trace my own Dalton line from the Internet and also I started to make many, many trips to the big LDS FHC library in SLC. Well the rest, they say, is history because I found a ton of my ancestors. It was one night while I was on Roots Web searching for Dalton's when I spotted an item that caught my eye. It was a time line of my Dalton family from England, Wales, America, Pennsylvania, Michigan and Utah. It gave the submitters name and E-Mail address. I mailed him a question about the Dalton line. He mailed back with his phone number and I called him.

It must be a very small world as they say, because the man on the other end just happened to be my first cousin from my hometown of Circleville, Utah! His name was Arthur Whittaker and we were related in two ways! His mother was a Dalton and one of my great-great grandmothers was a Whittaker. He only lived a few miles South of me in Kaysville, Utah. It so happened he had been searching out his Dalton line for quite a few years. We talked hundreds of times in the next two years and decided to write a book about our Dalton line. This book you are reading is the result of that decision.

Well this brings us up to date on my life so far, except for the fact that on April 11, 2001, I went into the hospital here in Ogden for a 5 by-pass open-heart surgery. I am home and recovering ok. I am up dating this Dalton book while I have the time off.

Update on Rodney Dalton & family – December 2003:

Well a lot has happened since my heart bypass in April of 2001. Again my luck or lack of it stuck again! My wife, Tracy developed brain cancer and was operated on in May of 2002 and again in Jan. of 2003. She had to have Chemotherapy & Radiation for the rest of the year, which turned out to be a great success because her cancer is in remission for now (Feb. 2004).

I retired at the age of 65 but decided to keep on working because my health is good. Because of this retirement we had extra money coming in, so I had a new home built for us in Harrisville, which is North West of Ogden.

An explanation must be made here about the last name of my son, Scott, and his descendants; After my divorce from my first wife, Carol, I had moved to SLC to work and live. We were having a hard time paying our bills and I was behind on my child support payments. After a while his mother Carol hired a lawyer and he told me I had to pay all the back support money! The only way out for me at this time was to let my son

be adopted by Carol's new husband. This I have regretted all my life.

A Tribute to Scott Rodney Dalton:

I am sorry to announce that we have lost another Dalton family member this past week. My son, Scott Rodney Dalton passed away of cardiac arrest on Friday January 10, 2003 in Ogden, Utah. He was only 41 years of age and left his loving wife, Brenda and 5 children, ages 7 to 21. He was a very successful businessman and was an Elder in the LDS Church.

I am very grateful to Scott for asking me about 5 years ago where the Daltons were from and if we were related to the "Dalton Gang." That question started me on my quest to find out just who our Dalton family really was. The rest is history, as they say! His family, friends and I will miss him dearly. Rodney Garth Dalton – 1/15/2003

Scott Rodney Dalton

September 7, 1961 – January 10, 2003

I'm Free
Don't grieve for me, for now I'm free.
I'm following the path God laid for me.
I took his hand when I heard him call,
I turned my back and left it all.
I could not stay another day
To laugh, to love to work, or play.
Tasks left undone must stay that way.
I found that peace at the close of the day.
If my parting has left a void,
Then fill it with remembered joy;
A friendship shared, a laugh, a kiss,
Oh yes, these things I too, will miss!
Be not burdened with times of sorrow.
I wish you the sunshine of tomorrow.
My life's been full, I savored much;
Good friends, good times, a loved one's touch.
Perhaps my time seemed all too brief,
Don't lengthen it now with undue grief.
Lift up your hearts and peace to thee,
God wanted me now, He set me FREE

Standard –Examiner Ogden Utah, January 13, 2003.

Scott Rodney Dalton-Thomas Welch

South Ogden – Scott Rodney Dalton, 41, passed away suddenly at his home on Friday, January 10, 2003, from cardiac arrest.

Scott was born September 7, 1961 in Ogden, Utah, the son of Rodney G. Dalton and Carol Thomas. They later divorced. Carol Thomas then married Lee B. Welch who in turn adopted Scott Rodney and he was renamed Scott Thomas Welch.

Scott married Jana Farley and they had one son, Jason Scott Welch. They later divorced. Scott then married Connie Rowher and they had a daughter, Andrea Lee Welch. They later divorced. Scott then married Brenda Kinghorn on March 7, 1998.

Scott had a zest for life. He loved to travel and was an avid reader and a gifted guitar player. Scott was somewhat of a jokester and pulled many pranks on his friends. He was a very good golfer and was always looking for ways to improve his golf game. Scott liked fast cars and was always looking to find the perfect sports car to drive. He was quite a “Ham” as his “Credit Man” commercials attest too. Most of all Scott, was a teacher and mentor to all who knew him. Scott’s talent and passion for golf was only exceeded by his passion for living and loving. Scott treasured his many friends, his extended families and his wife and children.

Scott’s brilliant business savvy led him to create and run two successful businesses: New Deals Used Cars and Quality Acceptance Corporation. “Credit Man” will be deeply missed.

Scott was an Elder in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints and a member of the Old Post Ward. A true highlight of his multi-faceted life was the gathering of his wife and children in the Salt Lake Temple in September of 1999.

Scott is survived by his one true love, Brenda Kinghorn Welch and his five children: Jason Welch, Casey Donk, Andrea Welch, Brianna Welch and Kylie Richins, as well as a grandson he adored, Gaige Scott Welch.

Also surviving are his parents, sisters, Natalie (Jeremy) Summers, Layton; Lana (Jerry)

Mutz, Joliet. IL; brother, Robert Welch, Medford, OR; in-laws, Roger Kinghorn, New Jersey; Randy (Susan) Kinghorn, Ogden; Rhonda (Robert) Fowers, Wyoming; many nephews and nieces; His loving grandmother, Edith Dalton. His paternal father, Rodney (Tracy) Dalton, his special uncle Russell Dalton, his Aunt Sheila Gerrard, his sister Kristi (Kevin) Dean and his best friend, John Barker.

Funeral services will be held Tuesday at 3 p.m. at Lindquist’s Ogden Mortuary, 3408 Washington Blvd.

Friends may call at the mortuary on Monday from 6 to 8 p.m. and Tuesday 2 to 2:45 p.m.

Interment, at Lindquist’s Washington Heights Memorial Park, 4500 So. Washington

Blvd. Ogden, Utah.

This letter was posted to the Dalton Family Web site on Feb. 4th 2005.

I have not mailed anything for a long time. As some of you know my dear sweet young wife, Tracy has had a three year long battle with brain cancer. She had her last operation on Sept. 24th 2004 and another MRI in December. The tumor was found to be growing back in a location that the doctors told us that it was of no use to operate again. Tracy being the strong soul she was decided she wanted to die at home. She had great birthday party on Dec. 21st, (41 years old) She also had a very happy Christmas. We had to call in Hospice on New Years day and put her in a hospital bed. She slowly went down hill until 7:45 PM, Sat. 29th 2005 when she passed away and returned to her Heavenly Father. Her Funeral was Thurs. Feb. 3th and i hired the local high school bagpipe band to play "Amazing Grace" for her. Our cousin, Arthur Whittaker gave a wonderful talk about me and Tracy and how she put up with me during all those years i spent researching and compiling my Dalton history. Thank you for your prayers and good wishes and i will get started soon to publish my Dalton book.

Regards
Your Cousin
Rodney Dalton

February/December 2005 - 2009

Well i did get through the above passings of Scott and Tracy. It was hard to do, but i had a lot of help from the new friends i have made in the Harrisville 4th ward. I was still working at Petersen's so i had some good money coming in, but the Dalton luck struck again! I was unceremonious layed off at Petersen's. Almost 17 years of service and loyalty! They told me my job was eliminated, and out the door i went. This was a sure age discrimination law suit if i wanted to pursue it, but i decided not to! I was only off work one week when i took a job as a welder with a company in Roy Utah, south of Ogden which was ½ the pay i was getting at Petersen's. This about killed me because of the hot hard work, but i didn't give up.

I tried to do as much around my house, like rocks and walkways. I promised Tracy i would take care of her little dog, "Brindle" and she is just like a little kid that needs all my attention, just like a wife!

While i was working as a welder my bad right knee got so bad i had to go to a doctor and he told me it was a wheel chair or a total knee replacement. Well i told my boss about this and again i was layed off!

I went into the hospital in October of 2006 and had a total knee replacement and wow did it hurt of a while. After a couple of months i was as good as new. I should have had it done 10 years earlier. By now i was approaching my 69th birthday and i decided i might as well retire and look about selling my home in Harrisville and downsize to a place that i could live out my retirement. I put up my house for sale in April and sold it on July 30 2007. I decided to buy another mobile home in an adult park in Farr West, Utah which is west of Ogden and is a good place to live. I am now in the process of remodeling to make it the way i want. "Home Sweet Home"

Well this story of my life is about over because i better close it out, at least on paper. Its time i tried to fine a publisher to print out a few books so i can send copied to my Dalton cousins.

Below are some of my pictures of my family and life.



The old Coca-Cola bottling plant on Riverdale road and 35th street where I worked in the 1960's



My first new car - 1959 Chev Impala customized by me



The Dalton Gang



I painted this truck at White Motors for a customer in Chicago



1986 Utah State Fast Pitch Champions at the World Series of Soft Ball



Christmas at grandma's house in 2003



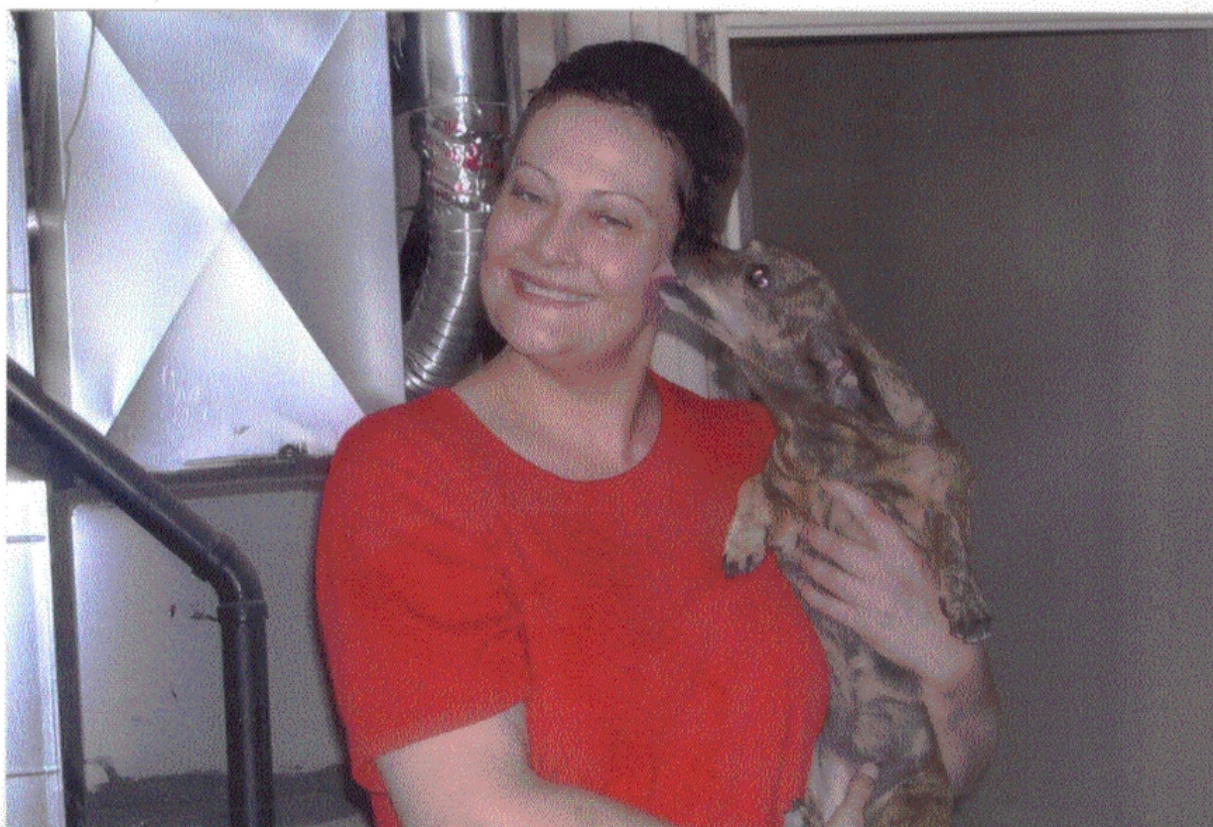
Thanksgiving dinner at hotel in 2003



The Dalton family – Kristi, Rodney & Evelyn



Tracy and her three kids! Ashley, Kazden and "Brindle"



My favorite picture – Tracy and her best friend "Brindle" c. 2004



Scott Rodney Dalton – Scott Thomas Welch



Tracy's family - Travis, Terri, Trisha, Mike, Brenda, Tyler, Ashley, Tracy Rodney & Toni



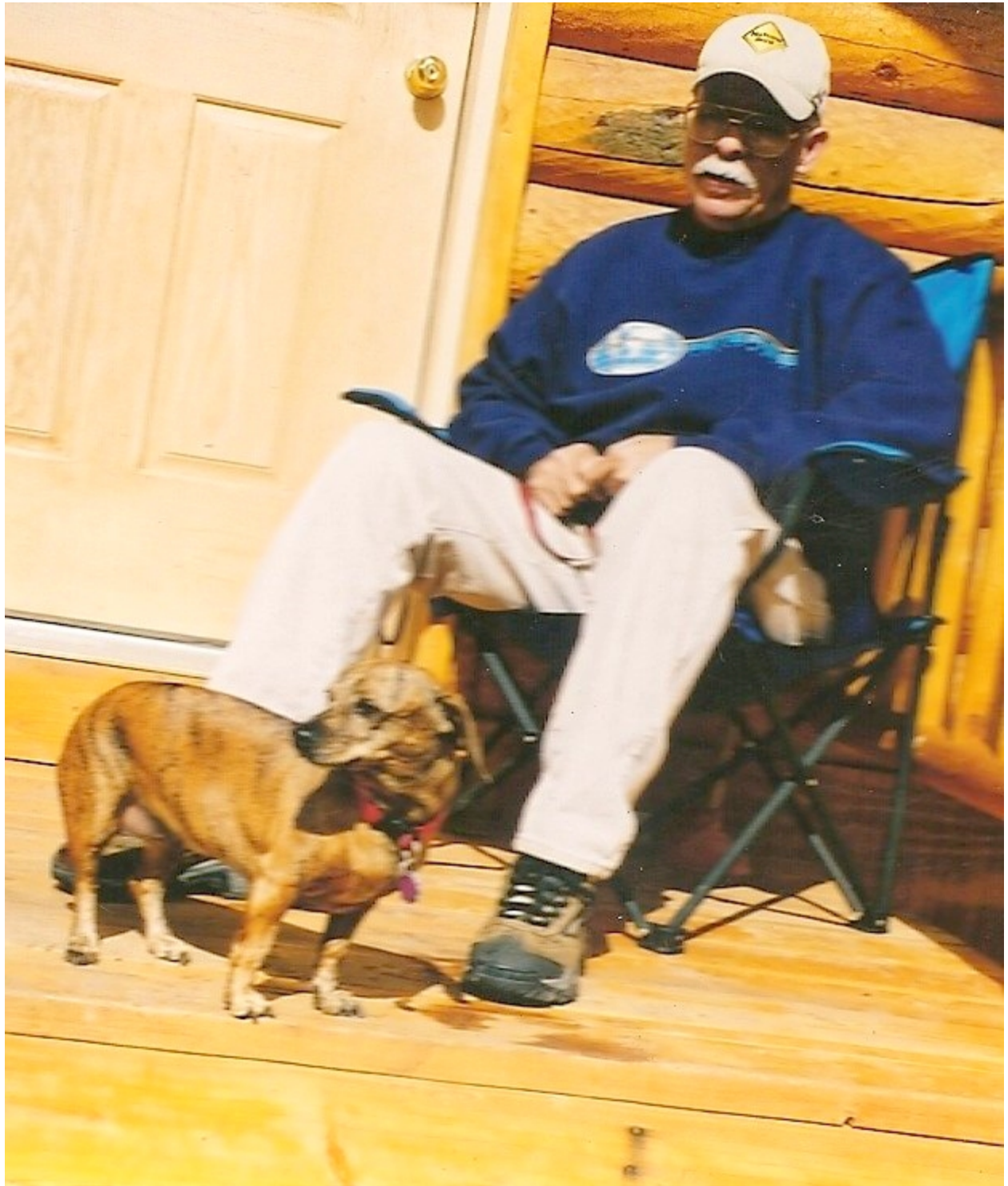
Rod and Tracy's new home in Harrisville Utah c. 2004



Russell, Sheila, Rodney, Edith and Garth Dalton at Russell's wedding



Tracy Lindsey-Dalton Passed away at age 41, What a lost!



“Old Man” Dalton & his best friend



In my Glory!



The Dean family – Jesse, Kevin, Kristi & Ashley



Rodney & Tracy Dalton



My family – Jason, Edith, Scott and Rodney



The cutest little girl in the world – My daughter, Kristi Dalton



This is my favorite spot - Sleeping



The Dalton family grave site in Ogden, Utah



Self explanatory



I call this one – Jesse & Smily dog!

“Oh Lord please bless my family and my dog, and Lord please let my grandpa Rod find
Thomas Dalton'

Disclaimer) This is addressed to any reader who is a “Nay Sayer” What I have found during my research for my roots is that the most difficult part of Genealogy History is how to ‘document’ the information I found. And, even more important, was how to evaluate a particular source accuracy. Thirty years ago, it was much simpler, because most of the information you found was ‘published’, usually in book form, and this is easy to document. In today’s world, with the Internet, there are genealogies all over the place and many are not documented at all. So the obvious question most people will have about this article is - Where did all the information come from? This is not easy to answer. First off, I must apologize to all the persons, living and dead, who I have shamelessly copied from, without giving the proper credit. From this basic information, I have used every source I could find to confirm, modify, add to and refine my articles. One of the first problems I found was that many sources contradicted each other. My philosophy is to compare, combine and adjust the information in each to match whatever historical documents I could find. So that now, much of the information comes from a combination of sources. Many details come from other genealogies that I found either on the Internet, or at Historical Societies.

I will also note when I find a source that contradicts other information I have found and I will sometimes arbitrarily decide which source I will 'accept' as most accurate. For some of my entries, you will probably not see any 'sources'. This means that the information was found on someone's family genealogy, and there was no 'original source' mentioned. My assumption is that if someone took the time to publish something, or add it to their genealogy, I will accept it as truthful, **until I find information to the contrary, at which time I will try to find some original sources to help me decide which information is more accurate.**

So, if I have no 'end notes' that show where I got my information from, you can assume that I found it as you did, with no source or documentation, and it must be accepted or rejected by you. Some information was taken from past research of other Dalton family researchers that did a lot of research before I got started. The information in this article about whether Sir Walter D'Alton and Le Sieur de Dalton are the same man is only my opinion as i have said above, therefore i think they are.

Rodney Garth Dalton; March 30th in the year of our Lord A.D. 2009.

Books by Rodney Garth Dalton;

FROM KNIGHT'S TO DREAMERS - THE JOURNEY OF OUR UTAH DALTON FAMILY; FROM EARLY 1100 AD to 2009 AD and BEYOND - Chapter 1- Vol. 1

FROM KNIGHT'S TO DREAMERS - Chapters 2-3-4-5 of Vol. 1

FROM KNIGHT'S TO DREAMERS Vol. 2 - Chapters 6-7-8-9-10

The collected works of Rodney Garth Dalton

The History of the Whittaker Family from Lancashire, England; A pioneer family who settled in Circleville, Utah

This is the end of this story!

